

WESTERN SYDNEY
UNIVERSITY



Hawkesbury Institute
for the Environment

**Grass and herb photosynthesis and productivity in a
resource-limited *Eucalyptus* woodland under elevated
atmospheric CO₂**

by

Varsha Shankar Pathare

(a.k.a. Varsha Balasaheb Sonawane)

A thesis submitted in fulfilment of requirements for the award
of the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

Hawkesbury Institute for the Environment

Western Sydney University

Australia

July 2017

gururbrahma gururviṣṇu gururdevo maheśvaraḥ
guruḥ sāksāt parabrahmā tasmai śrī gurave namaḥ

गुरुर्ब्रह्म गुरुर्विष्णु गुरुर्देवो महेश्वरः ।
गुरुः साक्षात् परब्रह्मा तस्मै श्री गुरवे नमः ॥

(From Guru Gita)

*Guru is verily the representative of Brahma, Vishnu and Shiva.
He creates, sustains knowledge and destroys the weeds of
ignorance. I salute such a Guru.*

***This thesis is dedicated to all my ‘gurus’-
teachers, mother, father and husband for their
endless support***

Acknowledgements

This thesis would not have been possible without the support of several people, each of whom contributed in different ways to the preparation and completion of the study. I gratefully acknowledge the Western Sydney University and the Hawkesbury Institute for the Environment for granting me the Australian Postgraduate Award. It is with great pleasure that I wish to express my utmost gratitude to my principal supervisor, Professor David Ellsworth. He has been a source of generosity, insight and inspiration; guiding me in all my efforts throughout my candidature. I am extremely grateful to my co-supervisor, A/Prof Oula Ghannoum, who provided me with the unflinching encouragement and feedback during the candidature.

It is with immense gratitude that I acknowledge Dr. Vinod Kumar, Mr. Craig Mcnamara and Mr. Steve Wohl, for their support during the measurements at the *Eucalyptus* Free-Air CO₂ Enrichment facility. My gratitude also goes to the staff at Hawkesbury Institute for the Environment, Dr. David Harland, Ms. Patricia Hellier, Mr. Gavin Mckenzie, Dr. Pushpinder Matta, Dr. Craig Barton, Mr. Burhan Amiji, and Mr. Goran Lopaticki for their support in administrative, laboratory and glasshouse work. I share the credit of my work with many colleagues who have been my mentors and friends, have assisted me during the experiments and data analysis, have provided valuable comments on my manuscripts and helped me to grow as a researcher. I wish to thank Dr. Kristine Crous, Dr. Teresa Gimeno, A/Prof Sally Power, Dr. John Drake, Dr. Remko Duursma, Dr. Julia Cooke, Mr. Sachin Chavan and Mr. Juan Pinerro. My special thanks to the HIE-R users group for their help in statistical data analysis.

I would also like to thank all my former colleagues and professors from Bhabha Atomic Research Center (Mumbai, India) and Pune University (Pune, India). I wish to thank Prof. Sujata S. Bhargava, Dr. Penna Suprasanna and Dr. Sudhakar Srivastava, who have laid the foundation of my research career. As always, my heartfelt gratitude goes to my mother, father, brother, uncle and friends for their love and support throughout my life. Finally, my most sincere thanks go to my beloved husband, Dr. Balasaheb V. Sonawane, who has been a shadow behind my success.

Statement of authentication

The work presented in this thesis is, to the best of my knowledge and belief, original except where acknowledged in the text. I hereby declare that I have not submitted this material, either in full or in part, for a degree at this or any other institution

Varsha Shankar Pathare

19th July 2017

Table of contents

Acknowledgements	iii
Statement of authentication	iv
Table of contents	v
List of tables	ix
List of supplementary tables	x
List of figures	xi
List of supplementary figures	xiii
List of images	xiv
List of abbreviations	xv
Publications	xvii
Abstract	1
Chapter 1 : General Introduction	3
1.1 Rise in atmospheric [CO ₂]	3
1.2 Terrestrial ecosystem responses to eCO ₂	4
1.3 Plant photosynthetic responses to eCO ₂	5
1.4 Water-limitations and eCO ₂	6
1.5 Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO ₂	9
1.6 Plant productivity responses to eCO ₂	12
1.7 Understory species and eCO ₂	13
1.8 <i>Eucalyptus</i> woodlands and <i>Eucalyptus</i> free-air CO ₂ enrichment experiment..	15
1.9 Thesis outline, objectives and hypotheses	18
Chapter 2 : Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland	24
2.1 Abstract.....	25
2.2 Introduction.....	26
2.3 Materials and Methods	30
2.3.1 Experimental design and site description.....	30
2.3.2 Gas exchange measurements at EucFACE and model fitting.....	31
2.3.3 Relative stomatal limitations.....	35
2.3.4 Other field measurements	35
2.3.5 Statistical analysis	36

2.4 Results.....	39
2.4.1 Effect of CO ₂ and measurement time on A _{net} and g _s	39
2.4.2 Effect of water availability on A _{net} , g _s and eCO ₂ -induced A _{net} enhancement	40
2.4.3 Effect of CO ₂ and measurement time on biochemical parameters.....	43
2.4.4 Effect of CO ₂ and measurement time on V _{SWC}	44
2.4.5 Effect of CO ₂ and measurement time on diffusional parameters.....	44
2.4.6 Relation between S _{lim} and A _{net} enhancement by eCO ₂	45
2.4.7 Species effects and higher-order interactions	46
2.5 Discussion.....	52
2.5.1 Maximum eCO ₂ -induced A _{net} enhancement is observed during dry periods	52
2.5.2 Elevated CO ₂ does not increase soil water content.....	53
2.5.3 Higher stomatal limitations and A _{net} enhancement by eCO ₂ during dry periods.....	54
2.5.4 Conclusions	56
2.6 Supporting information.....	57
2.6.1 Supplementary tables	57
2.6.2 Supplementary figures	61
2.6.3 Description of the Structural Equation Modelling (SEM) approach and figures.....	66
2.6.4 Supplementary methods.....	72
Chapter 3 : Photosynthetic acclimation and productivity responses of understory herbaceous species from a resource-limited <i>Eucalyptus</i> woodland	74
3.1 Abstract.....	74
3.2 Introduction.....	75
3.3 Material and methods	79
3.3.1 Experimental site description and species under study.....	79
3.3.2 Field measurements.....	79
3.3.3 Above-ground biomass measurements	81
3.3.4 Statistical analysis	82
3.4 Results.....	85
3.4.1 Effects of CO ₂ treatment and season on photosynthetic rates	85
3.4.2 Effects of CO ₂ treatment and season on biochemical capacity.....	86

3.4.3 Effect of CO ₂ treatment and season on N content $f_{N-Rubisco}$ and P content .	90
3.4.4 Effects on CO ₂ treatment and year on above-ground biomass.....	96
3.5 Discussion.....	98
3.5.1 Seasonal photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO ₂	98
3.5.2 Elevated CO ₂ does not stimulate above-ground biomass in the herbaceous understory species	100
3.5.3 Conclusions.....	103
3.6 Supplementary information	105
3.6.1 Supplementary figures	105
Chapter 4 : Differential photosynthetic and biomass responses of C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs to elevated CO₂	109
4.1 Abstract.....	109
4.2 Introduction.....	110
4.3 Material and Methods	113
4.3.1 Species under study and growth conditions.....	113
4.3.2 Gas exchange measurements	115
4.3.4 Statistical analysis	117
4.4 Results.....	120
4.4.1 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on photosynthetic rates and stomatal conductance	120
4.4.2 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on photosynthetic capacity	123
4.4.3 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on leaf N content,N allocation to Rubisco and leaf P content.....	126
4.4.4 Effects of eCO ₂ on the morphological traits	130
4.5 Discussion.....	134
4.5.1 Photosynthetic capacity downregulation under eCO ₂ is evident only in the C ₃ forbs	134
4.5.2 Possible reasons for photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in the C ₃ forbs	135
4.5.3 Biomass and allocation responses to eCO ₂	137
4.5.4 Conclusions.....	138
4.6 Supplementary information	140
4.6.1 Supplementary figures	140
Chapter 5 : Synthesis	144

5.1 Background overview and project aims	144
5.2 Key findings and general discussion	145
5.2.1 Elevated CO ₂ -induced A _{net} enhancement is a decreasing function of seasonal water availability	145
5.2.2 Growth at eCO ₂ causes down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in the C ₃ herbaceous species	146
5.2.3 Elevated CO ₂ does not increase biomass of the understory herbaceous species component from a water -limited ecosystem.....	148
5.2.4 Differences and similarities in field and glasshouse results	151
5.3 Implications of the current study for the Australian ecosystems.....	152
5.4 Implications of the current study for the Earth system models	153
5.5 Overall conclusions	154
5.6 Limitations of the study	155
5.7 Future work needed	156
References	159

List of tables

Table 2.1 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for net photosynthesis (A_{net}), temperature normalised maximum carboxylation ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) and electron transport rates ($J_{\text{max-25}}$), N content on area basis (N_{area}), stomatal conductance (g_s), relative stomatal limitation (S_{lim}) and C_i difference as the difference between the transition C_i and operating C_i , across the three C_3 species measured for seven seasonal time points ¹	38
Table 3.1 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA for light saturated net photosynthetic rates (A_{net}), light saturated photosynthetic rates measured at common $[\text{CO}_2]$ ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$), temperature normalized maximum carboxylation ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) and electron transport rates ($J_{\text{max-25}}$), N content on area (N_{area}) and mass basis (N_{mass}), apparent fraction of N allocated to Rubisco ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) P content on area (P_{area}) and mass basis (P_{mass}), N to P ratio (N: P ratio) and leaf mass per area (LMA)	83
Table 3.2 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA for live above-ground biomass of understory species with CO_2 treatment, year and functional type (grasses versus forbs) as main effects.	84
Table 4.1 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA with CO_2 and plant species as main effects for net photosynthesis in respective growth CO_2 levels (A_{net}), net photosynthesis at a common CO_2 level ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$), maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), leaf nutrient content on area basis (N_{area} and P_{area}), fraction of N allocated to Rubisco ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) morphological traits (total leaf dry weight, leaf area ratio and biomass)	119

List of supplementary tables

Table S 2.1 Results of the mixed-model split-plot ANOVA similar to Table 1.1, but for <i>M. stipoides</i> measured for 13 seasonal time points ¹	57
Table S 2.2 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for <i>in situ</i> maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), N content on mass basis (N_{mass}), intercellular CO ₂ concentration (C_i), ratio of intercellular to growth CO ₂ concentration (C_i/C_a) and C_i transition as the CO ₂ level for the transition between V_{cmax} -limited and J_{max} -limited A_{net} , across the three C ₃ species measured for seven seasonal time points ¹	58
Table S 2.3 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for <i>in situ</i> maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), N content on mass basis (N_{mass}), intercellular CO ₂ concentration (C_i), ratio of intercellular to growth CO ₂ concentration (C_i/C_a) and C_i transition as the CO ₂ level for the transition between V_{cmax} -limited and J_{max} -limited A_{net} , for <i>M. stipoides</i> measured for 13 seasonal time points ¹	59
Table S 2.4 Result of mixed-model split plot ANOVA for mean volumetric soil water content (V_{SWC}) measured in the week prior to the initiation of gas exchange measurements for 13 seasonal time points.....	60

List of figures

Fig. 1.1 Schematic representation of eCO ₂ effects on the fundamental processes, that is, photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) and stomatal conductance leading to the pool of biomass and the pool of soil moisture, respectively.	21
Fig. 2.1 Temperature, precipitation and soil water potential at EucFACE from February 2013 to May 2016.	34
Fig. 2.2 Time course through the three measurement years for net CO ₂ assimilation (A_{net}) and stomatal conductance (g_s) as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	41
Fig. 2.3 Relationship of A_{net} , g_s and eCO ₂ -induced relative A_{net} enhancement with weekly precipitation and V_{SWC}	42
Fig. 2.4 Time course through the three measurement years for maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	47
Fig. 2.5 Time course through the three measurement years for mean daily V_{SWC} content as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	48
Fig. 2.6 Time course of relative stomatal limitations (S_{lim}) and the difference between operating C_i and transition C_i (C_i difference) as a function of CO ₂ treatments.	49
Fig. 2.7 The fitted structural equation model (SEM) depicting causal hypotheses underlying the photosynthetic enhancement by eCO ₂ for herbaceous species measured at discrete points in the EucFACE experiment.	50
Fig. 2.8 The relative A_{net} enhancement ratio as a function of (a) S_{lim} (fraction of total limitations), and (b) C_i difference for all three species.	51
Fig. 3.1 Effects of eCO ₂ on light saturated net photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) and light saturated photosynthetic rates measured at common [CO ₂] ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$).	88
Fig. 3.2 Time course through the six measurement seasons for temperature normalised maximum carboxylation ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) and electron transport ($J_{\text{max-25}}$) as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	89
Fig. 3.3 Time course through the six measurement seasons for N content as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	92
Fig. 3.4 Time course through the six measurement seasons for N allocated to Rubisco enzyme ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) function of CO ₂ treatment.	93

Fig. 3.5 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf P content as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	94
Fig. 3.6 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf nitrogen to phosphorus ratio (N : P) as a function of CO ₂ treatment.	95
Fig. 3.7 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on above-ground biomass of understory species at EucFACE.	97
Fig. 4.1 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on (a) net photosynthetic rates on area basis (A_{net}) and (b) stomatal conductance (g_s) in two C ₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and two C ₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).	122
Fig. 4.2 Effects of eCO ₂ on parameters associated with photosynthetic capacity. ..	125
Fig. 4.3 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on (a) N content on area basis (N_{area}) and (b) N allocation to Rubisco ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) in C ₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C ₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).	128
Fig. 4.4 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on P content on area basis (P_{area}) in C ₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C ₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).	129
Fig. 4.5 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on (a) leaf mass per area, (b) leaf area ratio and (c) total leaf dry biomass in C ₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C ₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).	132
Fig. 4.6 Effects of CO ₂ treatment on (a) shoot biomass, (b) root biomass and (c) total biomass in C ₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C ₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).	133

List of supplementary figures

Fig. S 2.1 Relationship of A_{net} and g_s	61
Fig. S 2.2 Relationship of A_{net} and g_s with weekly precipitation and V_{SWC}	62
Fig. S 2.3 Time course for <i>in situ</i> maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) as a function of CO_2 treatments.	63
Fig. S 2.4 Time course for N content as a function of CO_2 treatments.....	64
Fig. S 2.5 Relationship of S_{lim} with weekly precipitation and V_{SWC}	65
Fig. S 2.6 The basic structure of the core SEM model used to examine the multivariate regulation of photosynthetic enhancement by $e\text{CO}_2$ for herbaceous species at the EucFACE site.....	68
Fig. S 2.7 An alternative fitted SEM model based on the original theoretical one in Fig. S 2.6, but including the measurement temperature instead of precipitation.	69
Fig. S 2.8 Another alternative SEM model similar to the theoretical model in Fig. S2.6, but replacing S_{lim} with C_i/C_a ratio.	70
Fig. S 2.9 Atmospheric $[\text{CO}_2]$ measured at EucFACE at 21 m above-ground for $a\text{CO}_2$ (gray symbols) and $e\text{CO}_2$ (blue symbols) plots during the first three years of CO_2 fertilisation. Data are 1-min means for $[\text{CO}_2]$. Smoothed regressions with 95% confidence intervals (gray areas) are shown for $a\text{CO}_2$ (black dashed line) and $e\text{CO}_2$ (blue dashed line).	71
Fig. S 3.1 Understory light levels at the EucFACE site measured in $a\text{CO}_2$ (gray points) and $e\text{CO}_2$ plots (blue points). Smoothed regressions with 95% confidence intervals are shown for $a\text{CO}_2$ (black line) and $e\text{CO}_2$ (blue line).....	105
Fig. S 3.2 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf mass per area (LMA; g m^{-2}) as a function of CO_2 treatment.....	106
Fig. S 4.1 Glasshouse growth conditions for the daily time period from 8 am to 4 pm during the duration of experiment.....	140
Fig. S 4.2 Daily glasshouse temperatures during the duration of experiment across all the four glasshouse chambers.	141
Fig. S 4.3 Effects of CO_2 treatment on volumetric soil water content (V_{SWC}) in C_3 grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C_3 forbs (Lpur and Smad).	142

List of images

Image 1.1 <i>Eucalyptus</i> free-air CO ₂ enrichment experiment (EucFACE).	22
Image 1.2 Herbaceous plant species used in the current study.	23
Image 2.1 Photosynthetic gas exchange measurements, using a LiCOR-6400 at the EucFACE.	73
Image 3.1 Above-ground biomass harvest of understory species at EucFACE.....	108
Image 4.1 Four herbaceous plant species growing in pots in the glasshouse during the current study.....	143

List of abbreviations

A_{\max}	- Light and CO ₂ saturated net CO ₂ assimilation rate
A_{net}	- Light saturated net CO ₂ assimilation rate
$A_{\text{net-Ca}}$	- Light saturated net CO ₂ assimilation rate at common CO ₂ concentration
$A_{\text{net-C}_i}$	- Net CO ₂ assimilation rate versus intercellular CO ₂ concentration
ANOVA	- Analysis of variance
aCO ₂	- Ambient CO ₂ concentrations
C	- Carbon
C ₃	- C ₃ photosynthetic pathway
C ₄	- C ₄ photosynthetic pathway
C _a	- Growth CO ₂ concentration
C _i	- Intercellular CO ₂ concentrations
C _i difference	- Difference between operating C _i and transition C _i
[CO ₂]	- CO ₂ concentration
CPW	- Cumberland Plain Woodland
ΔA_{net}	- Absolute enhancement of net CO ₂ assimilation rates
df	- Degrees of freedom
eCO ₂	- Elevated CO ₂ concentration
EucFACE	- <i>Eucalyptus</i> free air CO ₂ enrichment experiment
FACE	- Free air CO ₂ enrichment experiment
$f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$	- Fraction of N allocated to Rubisco enzyme
g_s	- Stomatal conductance
g_{sc}	- Stomatal conductance to CO ₂
IPCC	- Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change
J_{\max}	- In situ maximum electron transport rate
$J_{\max-25}$	- Temperature normalized maximum electron transport rate
k_{cat}	- Catalytic turnover number

LAR	- Leaf area ratio
lme	- Linear mixed effects model
n	- Sample size
N	- Nitrogen
NH ₄ ⁺	- Ammonium
NOAA	- National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration
NO ₃ ⁻	- Nitrate
NPP	- Net primary productivity
P	- Phosphorus
Rubisco	- Ribulose-1, 5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase
RuBP	- Ribulose-1, 5-bisphosphate
SEM	- Structural equation modelling
S _{lim}	- Stomatal limitations
T _{air}	- Air temperature
T _{leaf}	- Leaf temperature
V _{cmax}	- <i>In situ</i> maximum carboxylation rate
V _{cmax-25}	- Temperature normalized maximum carboxylation rate
V _{SWC}	- Volumetric soil water content

Publications

Chapter 2 has been published as **Pathare VS**, Crous KY, Cooke J, Creek D, Ghannoum O, Ellsworth DS (2017) Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland. *Global Change Biology*, **23**, 5164-5178. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13778>.

The thesis includes a revised version of above publication as Chapter 2.

Chapter 3 is anticipated to be submitted for publication in the journal of *Functional Ecology* as ‘Photosynthetic acclimation and productivity responses of understory herbaceous species from a resource-limited *Eucalyptus* woodland’.

Chapter 4 is anticipated to be submitted for publication in the journal of *Oecologia* as ‘Differential photosynthetic and biomass responses of C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs to elevated CO₂’.

Abstract

It has been suggested that plant species from the warmer ecosystems will show different and potentially larger photosynthesis and productivity responses to elevated CO₂ (eCO₂, ambient + 150 ppm) compared to those from the cold temperate ecosystems, on the basis of higher average annual temperature and greater water deficits in the former ecosystems. Based on these expectations, it has further been predicted that the warm water-limited ecosystems may have a greater potential to sequester the extra C that has been assimilated under eCO₂. However, empirical evidences testing these expectations are scarce. The overall aim of this thesis was to investigate the effects of eCO₂ on photosynthesis and productivity responses of the evergreen C₃ herbaceous species from the understory of a periodically water-limited warm-temperate *Eucalyptus* woodland. In a three-year field study conducted at the *Eucalyptus* free-air CO₂ enrichment experiment (EucFACE), I investigated how eCO₂-induced enhancement of photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) in herbaceous species varied with seasonal water availability. During the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at EucFACE, I measured the seasonal photosynthetic acclimation responses to eCO₂ in two dominant species- a C₃ forb and a C₃ grass, and measured responses of peak above-ground biomass to eCO₂ for total forbs and grasses. In a glasshouse experiment, I tested whether the species or functional groups growing under similar water inputs and nutrient availability differed in their photosynthetic or biomass allocation and growth responses to eCO₂ for two C₃ forbs and two C₃ grasses.

Findings from the field experiments demonstrate that eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement is a decreasing function of soil water availability, as the highest proportional increase in A_{net} under eCO₂ was evident during the driest periods. There was a lack of decrease in stomatal conductance (g_s) and increase in soil water content (V_{SWC}) under eCO₂, thus a ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ was absent. The proportional enhancement of A_{net} under eCO₂ was not a consequence of a ‘water-savings effect’, but alleviation of drought-induced stomatal limitation via increase in intercellular [CO₂]. In spite of significant enhancement of A_{net} across the three years of the current study, there was

also evidence of photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ in the dominant C₃ herbaceous species, especially during the peak growing season of spring. Also, there was no proportional stimulation of peak above-ground biomass in the understory grasses and forbs, which may have been a result of lack of a ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ and/or higher soil nutrient limitation. C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs differed in their photosynthetic and biomass allocation responses to eCO₂. Differences in leaf N content, N allocation and changes in above-ground biomass allocation likely affected the CO₂ responsiveness in these functional groups. In particular, there was an ability to maintain greater leaf area index, N allocation to photosynthesis and avoid down-regulation under eCO₂ by the grasses but not by the forbs. Findings from the current study suggest that interactions between seasonal water-availability eCO₂ will be critical in determining relative A_{net} enhancement response in herbaceous species from a water-limited ecosystem. However, the enhancement response may not be mediated via a ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂, which contrasts with the earlier findings from cold temperate ecosystems. Furthermore, evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in the dominant species and lack of relative increase in biomass under eCO₂, suggest a limited capacity of the understory herbaceous species from a grassy woodland to respond to eCO₂ and ultimately act as an aboveground C sink in future.

Chapter 1 : General Introduction

1.1 Rise in atmospheric [CO₂]

As a consequence of changes in land-use and increase in fossil fuel combustion, atmospheric [CO₂] has risen from the pre-industrial levels of about 280 ppm to the present high of 400 ppm in May 2013 (NOAA, 2013). Atmospheric [CO₂] is further expected to surpass the 550 ppm mark by the middle of this century (Keeling & Whorf, 2005, Prentice *et al.*, 2001). Sustained greenhouse gas emissions will continue to raise global average temperatures, with projected increases ranging from 0.3-4.8°C by the end of this century (IPCC, 2013). This increase in the global temperatures is expected to spatially and temporally alter the precipitation regimes, increase the intensity of droughts and heavy precipitation events (Luo *et al.*, 2008, Sillmann *et al.*, 2013). In addition to these effects on global climate, elevated CO₂ concentrations (eCO₂) are also expected to have considerable effects on the carbon and water balance of terrestrial ecosystems worldwide (IPCC, 2013), with some regional ecosystems responding more than others.

Photosynthesis and stomatal conductance are the most important processes by which higher plants and hence terrestrial ecosystems will respond to eCO₂. All other effects of eCO₂ on ecosystem processes will be mediated through these two fundamental processes (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007). Consequently, how eCO₂ affects terrestrial ecosystem functioning via effects on photosynthesis and stomatal conductance, has been an important topic of research for several decades (Anderson *et al.*, 2001, Drake *et al.*, 1997, Mueller *et al.*, 2016, Owensby *et al.*, 1993, Sasek & Strain, 1988) and is fundamental to accurate prediction of future responses of both natural and agricultural ecosystems (Drake *et al.*, 1997). In the following sections, current understanding about effects of eCO₂ on the photosynthesis and productivity responses of terrestrial ecosystems will be reviewed and critical knowledge gaps will be highlighted. Fig.1.1 summarises the expected effects of eCO₂ on photosynthesis and stomatal conductance, leading to pools of biomass and soil water content respectively, in a model grass-dominated ecosystem.

1.2 Terrestrial ecosystem responses to eCO₂

Terrestrial feedbacks to climate could accelerate or mitigate the effects of climate change depending on whether they act as a source or sink under future high [CO₂] (Heimann & Reichstein, 2008). An unresolved question pertaining to climate change research is to what degree will terrestrial ecosystems mitigate the effects of rise in atmospheric [CO₂] by sequestering extra C (Arora *et al.*, 2013, Baig *et al.*, 2015, Friedlingstein *et al.*, 2014). To address this question, free-air CO₂ enrichment experiments have been conducted in a range of terrestrial ecosystems for last two decades (Ainsworth & Long, 2005, Hovenden *et al.*, 2014, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Naumburg *et al.*, 2003, Norby & Zak, 2011, Nowak *et al.*, 2004). These previous studies have significantly improved our understanding about plant photosynthesis and productivity responses to climate change and provided valuable information for validating ecosystem models.

Despite the numerous studies cited above and elsewhere, our current understanding about photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ is strongly based on experimental data obtained from ecologically and economically important cold temperate ecosystems from the Northern hemisphere (Leakey *et al.*, 2012, Norby *et al.*, 2016). There is a lack of experimental data on photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ in many important biomes, but particularly for the warmer ecosystems from the warm-temperate, tropical and sub-tropical regions (Hickler *et al.*, 2008, Leakey *et al.*, 2012). Consequently, expected impacts of eCO₂ on these less-studied warm-temperate, tropical and sub-tropical ecosystems (henceforth referred as warmer ecosystems) have been modelled based on findings from the well-studied cold temperate ecosystems (Hickler *et al.*, 2008, Leakey *et al.*, 2012, Norby *et al.*, 2016, Rogers *et al.*, 2017). Warmer ecosystems differ from cold temperate ecosystems in important attributes like mean annual temperatures, amount and timing of precipitation, maximal evapotranspiration, type of nutrient limitation and vegetation type (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013), thus suggesting different responses to eCO₂ (Hickler *et al.*, 2008). Consequently, there is a need for experiments addressing the effects of eCO₂ on the less studied warmer ecosystems, in order to improve their representation in Earth

system models and accurately predict their capacity to mitigate or accelerate the impacts of climate change (Baig *et al.*, 2015, Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Körner, 2004).

1.3 Plant photosynthetic responses to eCO₂

Since atmospheric CO₂ is an important substrate for photosynthesis, an increase in the availability of CO₂ can have profound impact on growth and physiology of plants (Fig.1.1). The well-documented effects of eCO₂ include increase in net photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) and intercellular [CO₂] (C_i), decrease in stomatal conductance (g_s) and increase in plant water-use efficiency (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Long *et al.*, 2004). Since the C₃ photosynthetic pathway is CO₂-limited at current atmospheric [CO₂] and C₄ photosynthetic pathway is CO₂-saturated (Bowes, 1993), earlier predictions were that eCO₂ will enhance the A_{net} more in the C₃ plants compared to the C₄ plants (Bazzaz, 1990, Pearcy & Ehleringer, 1984, but see Ghannoum *et al.*, 2000). This short-term increase in A_{net} of C₃ species under eCO₂ may occur due to two basic reasons (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Long *et al.*, 2004). First, the Rubisco enzyme is substrate limited at current [CO₂] and hence increase in [CO₂] will increase C_i and carboxylation of Rubisco enzyme. Second, increase in [CO₂] will competitively inhibit oxygenation reaction of Rubisco enzyme and reduce photorespiratory carbon loss. Based on a biochemical theory for regulation of photosynthesis following Farquhar *et al.*, (1980), a simulation model (Duursma, 2015) at 28°C and with some standard physiological parameters relevant for understory species (see Chapter 2; here modelled with a $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ of 50 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, $J_{\text{max-25}}$ of 80 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $R_{\text{light-25}}$ of 0.78 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), a possible enhancement of photosynthesis can be modelled. Using these parameters, for an increase in atmospheric CO₂ concentration of 38%, A_{net} was increased by 48.6%. Also, the biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.*, (1980), based on the kinetic properties of Rubisco, suggests that an increase in A_{net} with an increase in the [CO₂] will be greater at higher than lower leaf temperatures. This is because higher temperatures (like 35°C, for instance) favour the oxygenation reaction of Rubisco thus resulting in loss of carbon. An increase in [CO₂] competitively inhibits oxygenation thus causing increase in the A_{net} by repression of photorespiration at high temperatures (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980).

However, photosynthetic stimulation observed under eCO₂ does not always match the theoretical expectations (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Nowak *et al.*, 2004). There are several factors that can interfere with and modify the responses of plants to eCO₂, particularly, under long-term exposure. Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Inauen *et al.*, 2012), soil nutrient limitations (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Reich *et al.*, 2006a), differences in seasonal growth conditions (Crous *et al.*, 2011, Lewis *et al.*, 1996, Onoda *et al.*, 2005), species and functional group differences in resource acquisition and allocation patterns (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003a, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004) and water availability (Hovenden *et al.*, 2014, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Perry *et al.*, 2012, Perry *et al.*, 2013) have all been shown to influence the magnitude of plant photosynthetic and productivity responses to eCO₂. In the following sections, I discuss the effects of water-limitation and photosynthetic capacity down-regulation on plant responses to eCO₂ and highlight the expected effects of these factors on the responses of warmer ecosystems.

1.4 Water-limitations and eCO₂

Based on the multiple resource-limitation hypothesis (Rastetter & Shaver, 1992), it was suggested that plant responses to eCO₂ will depend on the availability of soil resources like N, P and water (Rastetter *et al.*, 1997). Water is a primary environmental factor limiting growth and productivity in many terrestrial ecosystems like grasslands (Knapp *et al.*, 2002), deserts (Naumburg *et al.*, 2003), savannas and grassy woodlands (Polley *et al.*, 1997). Hence, water availability is expected to be crucial in determining the responses of these water-limited ecosystems to eCO₂ (Morgan *et al.*, 2004). Water-limited conditions are characterised by a decline in the soil water content, decrease in g_s and CO₂ uptake, down-regulation of light- and CO₂-saturated net photosynthesis (A_{max}), decrease in maximal rate of Rubisco carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max} ; Albert *et al.*, 2011, Craven *et al.*, 2011, Knapp *et al.*, 2001). Elevated CO₂ can mitigate the effects of drought mentioned above via two key mechanisms (Kelly *et al.*, 2016). First, through decrease in the stomatal conductance and increase in the soil water content and second, through direct stimulation of A_{net} because of increase in C_i (Fig.1.1). Consequently, the benefit of eCO₂ in terms of proportional

increase in photosynthesis and biomass is expected to be greater under water-limited conditions or in the water-limited ecosystems (Morgan *et al.*, 2004). In the following sections, I discuss the above mechanisms in detail and highlight the intervening factors.

A general, though not universal, finding from previous studies is that, eCO₂ induces stomatal closure in most of the herbaceous species irrespective of the photosynthetic pathway (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Wand *et al.*, 1999). Effects of eCO₂ on g_s and hence the pools of soil moisture are indicated in Fig.1.1. In particular, eCO₂-induced decrease in g_s can lead to a decrease in the transpiration and increase in the soil water content (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). This eCO₂-induced increase in the soil water content, also termed as a ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂, has been reported across a range of water-limited ecosystems (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Fay *et al.*, 2012, Morgan *et al.*, 2004) and has led to significant effects on plant growth and ecosystem processes (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Fay *et al.*, 2012, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). For instance, an increase in soil water content under eCO₂ has been found to delay drying and increase plant productivity during the dry periods (Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004), lengthen the growing season (Reyes-Fox *et al.*, 2014) and increase the nutrient mineralisation rates and organic matter decomposition (Dijkstra *et al.*, 2010, Wullschleger *et al.*, 2002). However, the extent, timing and duration of eCO₂-induced ‘water-savings effect’ has also been found to vary among different ecosystems and species thus leading to variation in the relative eCO₂-induced enhancement of A_{net} and plant biomass. This variation in the ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ has been attributed to changes in leaf area index, canopy temperatures (Gray *et al.*, 2016, Kelly *et al.*, 2016) and differences in soil texture (Fay *et al.*, 2012, Polley *et al.*, 2012a). For instance, eCO₂-induced increase in leaf area index counteracted the reduction in transpiration resulting from reduced stomatal conductance under eCO₂ thus leading to lack of soil water savings at the SoyFACE facility (Gray *et al.*, 2016). Furthermore, the ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ and the relative increase in above-ground productivity were strongest on the coarse-textured sandy loam soils compared to the fine-textured soils from a mesic grassland (Fay *et al.*, 2012). Also, concurrent rise in atmospheric temperatures and vapor pressure deficit

may offset the increase in soil water content under eCO₂ (Bernacchi and VanLoocke, 2015).

The second mechanism through which eCO₂ may mitigate the effects of drought is through alleviation of stomatal limitations (Lawlor, 2002). Drought-induced decrease in g_s often leads to higher stomatal limitations (Chaves *et al.*, 2002, Lawlor, 2002). Stomatal limitation (S_{lim}) is considered to decrease C_i and A_{net} , as a result of which leaves operate on the linear part or CO₂-responsive region of the A_{net} - C_i response curve. Elevated CO₂-induced increase in C_i may help overcome the stomatal limitations thus leading to increase in photosynthetic rates (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012, Nowak *et al.*, 2004). However, this might be true only in case of mild to moderate drought where biochemical processes are not affected (Ghannoum *et al.*, 2003, Lawlor, 2002). Severe drought can result in biochemical limitations that decrease photosynthetic capacity (Grassi & Magnani, 2005) and hence any increase in the external CO₂ concentration may be unable to restore the photosynthetic rates (Gray *et al.*, 2016, Lawlor, 2002). For example, Gray *et al.*, 2016 observed that stimulation of soybean yield by eCO₂ diminished to zero during severe drought, because decreases in g_s and depression of C_i were greater in eCO₂ compared to aCO₂. Overall, intensity of drought may also cause significant variation in the relative photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂.

In addition to the above two mechanisms, interaction between eCO₂ and water availability can also have other effects on the physiology and morphology of plants (Wullschleger *et al.*, 2002). These effects include (i) impacts on the leaf water potential and osmotic adjustments; (ii) enhanced instantaneous and whole plant water use efficiencies; and (iii) higher allocation of carbon to root biomass improving the plant capacity for water exploitation. Taken together, above evidences suggest the importance of water availability in controlling plants and hence ecosystem responses to eCO₂. However, these conclusions largely emerge from studies conducted in the cold temperate ecosystems (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Morgan *et al.*, 2001, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). Effects of water availability on plant responses to eCO₂ have been less studied in the warmer terrestrial ecosystems compared to the cold temperate

ecosystems (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). In particular, evaporative demand in the warmer regions often exceeds precipitation thus resulting in higher water deficits compared to the cold temperate ecosystems. Consequently, compared to the cold temperate ecosystems, warmer ecosystems may have larger, but unquantified, potential for eCO₂-induced photosynthetic and biomass enhancement mediated via soil water-savings and alleviation of drought-induced stomatal limitations.

Effects of the seasonal water-availability on plant responses to eCO₂ are also less studied (Hovenden *et al.*, 2014, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). Seasonal water limitation is a characteristic feature of warmer ecosystems like the savannas and grassy woodlands (Polley *et al.*, 1997). As previously suggested by Morgan *et al.*, 2004, such ecosystems with multiple in season wet-dry cycles have the potential for more consistent and substantial responses to eCO₂, possibly due to moderate water-stress, compared to the ecosystems with prolonged and severe dry periods. For instance, eCO₂ can ameliorate the stomatal limitations imposed by moderate drought by increasing C_i and restoring photosynthetic rates (Lawlor, 2002). Furthermore, eCO₂-induced increase in soil water content during periodic droughts may facilitate the establishment of woody plants seedlings that would otherwise be excluded due to drought stress (Bond & Midgley, 2012). However, these expectations remain contentious because field studies addressing the interaction of effects of eCO₂ and seasonal water availability on photosynthesis, soil water savings and plant productivity in the seasonally water-limited ecosystems like the grassy woodlands and warm temperate/subtropical ecosystems are lacking (Leakey *et al.*, 2012). An understanding of relationship between seasonal water availability and eCO₂ effect is critical since large changes in the timing of rainfall are anticipated by climate models, even where annual total is expected to remain unchanged (Berg *et al.*, 2016, Sillmann *et al.*, 2013).

1.5 Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂

Elevated atmospheric CO₂ is expected to increase the carboxylation of Rubisco enzyme and decrease the rates of photorespiration thus leading to enhanced photosynthesis and growth particularly in the C₃ species (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Long *et*

al., 2004). However, this short-term stimulation of photosynthetic rates may diminish under long-term (days to years) growth at eCO₂, a phenomenon termed as photosynthetic acclimation or photosynthetic capacity down-regulation (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Long *et al.*, 2004). Down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity is manifested as a reduction in the Rubisco carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and maximal electron transport rate under eCO₂ (J_{max}) (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Stitt & Krapp, 1999). Photosynthetic capacity downregulation under eCO₂ has been reported in the C₃ species from temperate ecosystems and is mostly associated with plant N status and soil N availability (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Lee *et al.*, 2011).

Low soil N availability, decrease in the leaf N due to increased carbohydrates (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Lee *et al.*, 2011), increase in the plant N demand due to accelerated growth (Yin, 2002), decrease in the N acquisition capacities (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Feng *et al.*, 2015) and source-sink imbalance due to the inability of plants to use the excess photosynthate (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Long *et al.*, 2004) have all been shown to result in down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in plants exposed to eCO₂. Given the large amount of N that plants invest in Rubisco, the key carbon fixing enzyme, this type of acclimation under eCO₂ allows plant to optimize overall performance by providing N that can be re-allocated away from photosynthetic apparatus towards other plant functions like growth and nutrient foraging (Medlyn *et al.*, 1999, Sage, 1994). This re-distribution of N could help increase the N-use efficiency of plants growing at eCO₂ (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). Taken together, above evidence suggests that photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in response to growth under eCO₂ will be greater in the low N conditions compared to the high N conditions (Isopp *et al.*, 2000, Moore *et al.*, 1999).

Despite the numerous studies, there is still debate on how frequently the reductions in photosynthetic capacity are realized (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003a, Poorter & Evans, 1998). The cold temperate ecosystems are often considered to be N-limited (Schulze *et al.*, 1994). Whereas, evidences suggest that N availability generally tends to be higher in many warmer ecosystems relative to cold temperate ecosystems (Brookshire *et al.*, 2012, Hedin *et al.*, 2009). The macronutrient P, rather than N, could be a primary

nutrient limiting photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ in the warmer ecosystems with highly weathered soils (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Lambers *et al.*, 2008, Vitousek *et al.*, 2010). Because photosynthetic capacity is strongly controlled by N, one could predict that photosynthetic capacity of plants from the warmer ecosystems will be maintained under eCO₂ due to high N availability (Isopp *et al.*, 2000, Stitt & Krapp, 1999). However, this might not always be the case since photosynthetic capacity down-regulation has been observed even under N sufficient/fertilized conditions (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Inauen *et al.*, 2012) and may be attributed to increase in microbial nutrient immobilisation (De Graaff *et al.*, 2006, Gill *et al.*, 2002), decrease in the plant N acquisition capacities (Feng *et al.*, 2015) and species specific differences in N acquisition, allocation and processing capacities (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ruiz-Vera *et al.*, 2017). Understanding the extent of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ in the warmer ecosystems is critical for assessing their capacity to sequester extra C under future climate change.

In addition to the soil N status, differences among plant species and functional groups (trees, grasses, forbs and legumes) have also been shown to affect the magnitude of eCO₂-induced down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). These differences have been largely attributed to the differences in resource acquisition, processing and allocation patterns (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Ruiz-Vera *et al.*, 2017). For instance, Crous *et al.*, (2010) observed a decrease in V_{cmax} and J_{max} under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs, but not in the C₃ grasses, even under high soil N availability. This down-regulation response was attributed to the lower root foraging capacities resulting in lower leaf N content in the forbs. Furthermore, in a study on two tobacco cultivars with contrasting ability to produce sink (leaves), Ruiz-Vera *et al.*, (2017) reported that the greater ability to utilize photosynthate resulted in only 9% down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ in cultivar with higher sink capacity compared to 25% down-regulation in cultivar with lower sink capacity. Legumes may also show a smaller tendency towards down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂, irrespective of the soil nutrient availability, because of their abilities to fix atmospheric N and the strong carbon demand (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003b, Rogers *et al.*, 2009). Thus, plant species vary

in the magnitude of photosynthetic acclimation responses to eCO₂, which may be independent of nutrient supply (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Lee *et al.*, 2011), and could be attributed to differences in traits and growth strategies. Such differential photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ among the plant species and functional groups can have significant impact on composition and functioning of the terrestrial ecosystems in future (Reich *et al.*, 2001, Zelikova *et al.*, 2014).

1.6 Plant productivity responses to eCO₂

Several previous studies suggest that CO₂ fertilisation increases A_{net} in the C₃ species (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Long *et al.*, 2004). But does the increase photosynthesis under eCO₂ always lead to an increase in the plant biomass? Many studies report a positive CO₂ fertilisation effect on plant growth across a range of terrestrial ecosystems (Ainsworth & Long, 2005, McCarthy *et al.*, 2010, Talhelm *et al.*, 2014). In contrast, there are evidences showing a lack of eCO₂-induced increase in biomass in the trees and herbaceous species (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Reich & Hobbie, 2013). Increase in the ecosystem productivity under eCO₂ has been expected to sequester more carbon in future thus resulting in a negative feedback on the climate change (Arora *et al.*, 2013, Baig *et al.*, 2015, Friedlingstein *et al.*, 2014). However, previous reports on variable stimulation of plant biomass under eCO₂ suggest that the capacities of different ecosystems to act as a carbon sink will differ depending on the plant species, type of nutrient limitation, water availability and climatic conditions (Ahlström *et al.*, 2015, Ahlström *et al.*, 2013). In principle, the C₃ species growing at higher average annual temperatures have greater potential to respond positively to eCO₂ in terms of photosynthesis and biomass, than the plants growing in regions with low average annual temperatures (Hickler *et al.*, 2008). This is because, high temperature decreases the CO₂ specificity of Rubisco thus increasing photorespiration (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980, Long, 1991). On the other hand, eCO₂ is expected to decrease photorespiration thus increasing the CO₂ assimilation rates and net primary productivity (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980, Long, 1991). Consequently, modelling studies based on the Rubisco kinetics predict a larger proportional stimulation of +35% in net primary productivity for the C₃ species growing in the warmer ecosystems, compared

to the +23% stimulation expected for the cooler higher latitude ecosystems (Hickler *et al.*, 2008). Furthermore, eCO₂-induced stimulation of biomass is also expected to be higher in the water-limited ecosystems because eCO₂ can ameliorate the negative effects of drought by increasing C_i and soil water content (Fatichi *et al.*, 2016, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). Because the warmer ecosystems also experience higher water-deficits compared to the cold temperate ecosystems, this may further support the expectation of larger stimulation of plant biomass in the former ecosystem. However, these estimates for eCO₂-induced increase in plant productivity for the warm, water-limited ecosystems, assume that changes in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ drive changes in productivity, which is often not the case (Kirschbaum, 2011, Körner, 2004). Therefore, it is important to determine whether the prediction of higher eCO₂-induced productivity in warm, water-limited ecosystems is supported by experimental observations. Though high mean annual temperatures and water-limitation may stimulate biomass under eCO₂ in the warmer ecosystems, intervening factors like low P availability (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013), increased microbial nutrient immobilisation (Gill *et al.*, 2002) and decrease in N acquisition capacities (Feng *et al.*, 2015) may dampen this response (Fig.1.1). For instance, a recent study conducted in a P-limited sub-tropical grassy woodland ecosystem observed lack of eCO₂-induced increase in biomass in the mature trees (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017). It would be interesting to investigate if a similar lack of growth response to eCO₂ is evident in the herbaceous species growing in P-limited soils.

1.7 Understory species and eCO₂

Over the past few decades, free-air CO₂ enrichment experiments have been conducted in different types of terrestrial ecosystems to assess their responses to eCO₂ in terms of photosynthesis, growth and carbon sequestration (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012, Körner *et al.*, 2005, McCarthy *et al.*, 2010). However, these experiments largely focus on over story responses to eCO₂ (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012, Liberloo *et al.*, 2009, Talhelm *et al.*, 2014) and responses of grasslands (Hovenden *et al.*, 2014, Lee *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2011). Very few studies focus on the understory vegetation responses to eCO₂, but generally involve tree seedling and shrubs (Kim *et al.*, 2015, Naumburg & Ellsworth,

2000, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007, Springer & Thomas, 2007). Till date, less attention has been paid on the eCO₂ impacts on photosynthesis and productivity responses of the understory herbaceous vegetation (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Dawes *et al.*, 2015), in spite of its importance for overall ecosystem diversity and productivity (Misson *et al.*, 2007, Nilsson & Wardle, 2005, Oliver & Larson, 1996).

An important driver of understory plant community is light availability (Chazdon & Pearcy, 1991, Springer & Thomas, 2007). Light availability in the understory is variable, with periods of low diffuse light alternating with periods of high light intensity called as sun flecks (Chazdon & Pearcy, 1991). Efficient utilisation of sun flecks determines the daily carbon gain of the understory species (Naumburg & Ellsworth, 2000). Is this low level of light likely to preclude growth stimulation by CO₂? In theory, eCO₂ should reduce photorespiration, increase quantum yield and, thus, decrease the light compensation point of photosynthesis (Long & Drake, 1991). Hence, the leaf carbon balance should be improved in low light under eCO₂, resulting in larger relative photosynthesis and growth enhancement responses in the understory species (Granados & Körner, 2002, Würth *et al.*, 1998). However, the few studies that have examined understory herbaceous species and woody seedling responses to eCO₂ show inconsistent results (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015, Naumburg & Ellsworth, 2000, Souza *et al.*, 2010). For example, light-saturated net photosynthetic rates of the seedlings of four broadleaved species growing in the understory of loblolly pine forest increased under eCO₂ at the Duke FACE experiment (Naumburg & Ellsworth, 2000). Furthermore, the shade-tolerant species were found to be most responsive to eCO₂ in terms of increase in A_{net} whereas, the least shade tolerant species showed lower A_{net} enhancement under eCO₂ (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012). Similar to photosynthetic responses, biomass responses of the understory vegetation to eCO₂ have also been found to be inconsistent with responses ranging from increased biomass (Souza *et al.*, 2010), lack of eCO₂-induced biomass enhancement (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015) and decrease in biomass under eCO₂ (Awmack *et al.*, 2007). These inconsistent photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ in the understory vegetation could be attributed to variation in species shade-tolerance capacities, over story dynamics, water and nutrient availability (Belote *et al.*, 2004, Kim *et al.*, 2015,

Kubiske *et al.*, 2002, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007). Among these, over story dynamics has been found to be important in determining the understory photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ (Kim *et al.*, 2015, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007).

The responses of over story trees to eCO₂ can indirectly affect the understory responses to eCO₂, mostly by altering the understory environmental conditions like soil temperature, moisture and light availability (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015). In particular, previous field studies report that eCO₂ increases the over story leaf production and increases leaf area index (Lewis *et al.*, 2010, Liberloo *et al.*, 2007, McCarthy *et al.*, 2010, Norby & Zak, 2011). Thereby, eCO₂ may decrease light availability in the understory. Such changes in understory light availability could offset or even reverse the positive effects of CO₂ fertilisation on the photosynthesis and biomass of the understory vegetation (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015). For example, increases in over story leaf area index under eCO₂ led to a reduction in the understory light availability which nullified the growth enhancing effect of eCO₂ on the understory vegetation of a Pine forest (Kim *et al.*, 2015).

1.8 *Eucalyptus* woodlands and *Eucalyptus* free-air CO₂ enrichment experiment

Tree-grass ecosystems like savannas and grass-dominated woodlands cover more than 20% of the global terrestrial landscape, occupying extensive areas of tropical and subtropical regions in Africa, Asia, South America and Australia (Bond & Midgley, 2000). An important example of such tree-grass ecosystems are the grass-dominated *Eucalyptus* woodlands of Australia (Scheiter *et al.*, 2015). Savannas and grass-dominated woodlands are characterized by the presence of tree-grass mixtures with seasonal water-limitation, grass-fire feedbacks and tree-grass competition as important mechanisms controlling the existence of these ecosystems (Baudena *et al.*, 2015). Elevated CO₂ is expected to have profound effects on the composition and functioning of these ecosystems globally (Bond & Midgley, 2000, Scheiter *et al.*, 2015), which may be mediated through increases in soil water content and plant productivity and altered tree-grass interactions (Bond & Midgley, 2000, Bond & Midgley, 2012, Polley *et al.*, 1997). An important consequence of these eCO₂-induced changes could be

altered fire-regimes due to changes in soil water content and plant biomass (Bond & Midgley, 2012). Despite their importance for global productivity and biogeochemical cycles, the tree-grass ecosystems remain less studied in terms of response to eCO₂ (Leakey *et al.*, 2012).

To address the knowledge gaps discussed in previous sections, I undertook a study of the herbaceous plant community from a *Eucalyptus* woodland near Richmond, NSW Australia (33° 37' S, 150° 44.3' E). Several distinct characteristics of this tree-grass ecosystem, called as Cumberland Plain Woodland (CPW), provide a unique opportunity to address the effects of eCO₂ on photosynthesis and productivity of herbaceous understory species growing in warm, water and nutrient limited ecosystem. CPW is characterised by a warm-temperate to sub-tropical climate with a mean annual temperature of 17°C and a mean daily maximum temperature of 30°C during the warmest month (January) and 17.6°C during the coldest month (July). In addition to the year-round warm climate, the site also experiences water-limited conditions indicated by a 20-year average annual precipitation of 800 mm and an estimated annual pan evapotranspiration of 1350 mm (Duursma *et al.*, 2016). Precipitation occurs periodically and throughout the year thus resulting in multiple seasonal wet-dry cycles. This variability in seasonal water availability helps me address the effects of periodic droughts on eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement and ‘water-savings effects’. In addition to seasonal water availability, tree-grass interactions and fire have a profound effect on the existence of CPW (Watson, 2005). Furthermore, the site is characterised by presence of nutrient-limited soils, in particular low P availability (Crous *et al.*, 2015). This feature helps me test the effects of eCO₂ on photosynthetic capacity acclimation and biomass of plants growing under nutrient-limited, especially P-limited, conditions. Another significant feature of the site is the diverse vegetation type. The vegetation consists of an over story dominated by canopy forming trees like *Eucalyptus tereticornis* Sm. and *E. amplifolia* Naudin (Gimeno *et al.*, 2016). However, the relatively high species diversity of this vegetation type (≈ 70 species) is attributed to the herbaceous understory vegetation (Tozer, 2003) comprising a mixture of C₃ grasses, C₃ forbs and C₄ grasses. *Microlaena stipoides* Labill., a native C₃ grass, is the dominant herbaceous species at EucFACE ($\approx 70\%$ of total understorey biomass,

Chapter 3) along with the co-occurrence of native C₃ forbs like *Lobelia purpurascens* R.Br., and native C₄ grasses like *Cymbopogon refractus* R.Br. In addition, an invasive C₃ forb -*Senecio madagascariensis* Poir. and an invasive C₃ grass-*Nasella neesiana* (Trin. & Rupr.) Barkworth, have a significant presence in the CPW ecosystem (McNaught, 2006, Sands & Goolsby, 2011). Four species, that is, *M. stipoides*, *L. purpurascens*, *S. madagascariensis* and *N. neesiana* were the focus of current study. These four species are evergreen as they possess green leaves throughout the year, depending on water availability and show a progressive type of leaf senescence wherein the older leaves die but the young leaves are still active (Leopold, 1961). These species flower from spring season through to autumn season. *L. purpurascens* is a small, creeping forb growing about 30 cm in length (Image 1.2c). *S. madagascariensis* is an erect forb with numerous branches and grows up to 20-60 cm high (Image 1.2d).

Free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE) experiments provide the most feasible method to study eCO₂ effects on the terrestrial ecosystems (Nowak *et al.*, 2004). These experiments typically involve the use of horizontal and vertical gas dispersal pipes around the experimental plots, forming a 10-30 m diameter rings (Image 1.1). These pipes emit regulated concentrations of CO₂ within the canopy thus exposing the plants to futuristic levels of CO₂. Since the experimental plots are not isolated from the surrounding natural environment, FACE experiments facilitate a direct field insight into effects of eCO₂ on the complex terrestrial ecosystem functioning. One such experiment is the *Eucalyptus* free-air CO₂ enrichment experiment (EucFACE, Image 1.1) located on an ancient alluvial flood plain in a remnant patch of native CPW near Richmond, NSW Australia (33° 37' S, 150° 44.3' E). EucFACE is one of three novel next generation FACE experiments (Norby *et al.*, 2016) and the very first forest FACE established in a mature forest growing on P-limited soils. Herein, this thesis presents results from the first three years of CO₂ fertilisation at EucFACE, addressing the effects of eCO₂ on seasonal photosynthesis, stomatal conductance, soil water savings (Chapter 2), photosynthetic acclimation and above-ground productivity (Chapter 3) of herbaceous understory. In addition, a glasshouse study was performed to investigate the effects of eCO₂ on photosynthesis, total biomass and biomass allocation for C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs growing under similar water and nutrient supply.

1.9 Thesis outline, objectives and hypotheses

I carried out a series of experiments at the EucFACE facility and in the glasshouse. The work is presented in this thesis as a series of three experimental papers, accepted or prepared for submission to peer-reviewed journals. There are total five chapters in this thesis which includes an introductory literature review (Chapter 1), three experimental chapters (Chapter 2, 3 and 4) and a final synthesis and general discussion (Chapter 5) that contextualises the research, discusses key findings and implications. In the following sections, I highlight the specific objectives and hypotheses of three experimental chapters.

Chapter 2: Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland

(Published in the journal of *Global Change Biology* (Pathare *et al.*, 2017). The thesis includes a revised version of this publication as Chapter 2).

In Chapter 2, I investigated the relationship between seasonal water-availability and eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement. I also investigated whether eCO₂ results in a ‘water-savings effect’ in a warm and seasonally water-limited grassy woodland. In addition to seasonal water-availability, I also tested whether seasonal variation in temperature affected the relative eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement. Because water is an important factor limiting growth and productivity in this grassy woodland ecosystem, I hypothesized that,

- (i) Maximum photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ will be observed in dry seasons;
- (ii) This photosynthetic enhancement will be mediated by a decrease in stomatal conductance in eCO₂ and hence increases in soil water content;
- (iii) Elevated CO₂ will alleviate stomatal limitations induced by stomatal closure during the dry periods thus resulting in increased photosynthetic rates.

Chapter 2 is based on a field experiment conducted at the EucFACE facility. In order to test above hypotheses, I conducted a series of seasonal photosynthetic gas exchange

measurements on the dominant understory C₃ herbaceous species at the EucFACE facility during the first three years of CO₂ fertilisation at this experiment.

Chapter 3: Photosynthetic acclimation and productivity responses of understory herbaceous species from a resource-limited Eucalyptus woodland

In Chapter 3, I investigated the effects of eCO₂ on seasonal photosynthetic acclimation responses of a dominant C₃ grass and C₃ forb growing in the understory of a warm, water and nutrient-limited, especially P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015), grassy woodland ecosystem. In addition to photosynthetic responses, I also investigated the aboveground biomass responses to eCO₂ for total grasses and total forbs. I hypothesized that,

- (i) There would be a larger down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ during autumn than spring and summer due to the lower growth sink capacity in that season;
- (ii) There will be a significant increase in above-ground biomass of herbaceous species under eCO₂.

Chapter 3 is based on a field experiment conducted at the EucFACE facility. To test above hypotheses, I conducted a series of seasonal photosynthetic gas exchange, and N content measurements on the dominant C₃ grass and C₃ forb at the EucFACE facility during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at this experiment. In addition, I measured the above-ground biomass of total grasses and total forbs for two peak growing seasons of summer during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation.

Chapter 4: Differential photosynthetic and biomass responses of C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs to elevated CO₂ under nutrient-limited conditions

The goal of Chapter 4 was to examine how co-existing C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs, provided with similar water inputs and nutrient supply from the soil for growth, may respond differently to eCO₂. In particular, I investigated the key photosynthetic and morphological traits responsible for differential species responses to eCO₂. Further, I also investigated the effects of eCO₂ on total biomass and biomass allocation for C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs. I hypothesized that,

- (i) Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation will be manifested as a decrease in leaf N content and/or protein specific down-regulation.
- (ii) Down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity would result in little or no enhancement of photosynthetic rates and biomass

Chapter 4 is based on a glasshouse experiment. This experiment was designed to simulate the nutrient-limited conditions at EucFACE and hence soil excavated from around the EucFACE facility was used for this experiment.

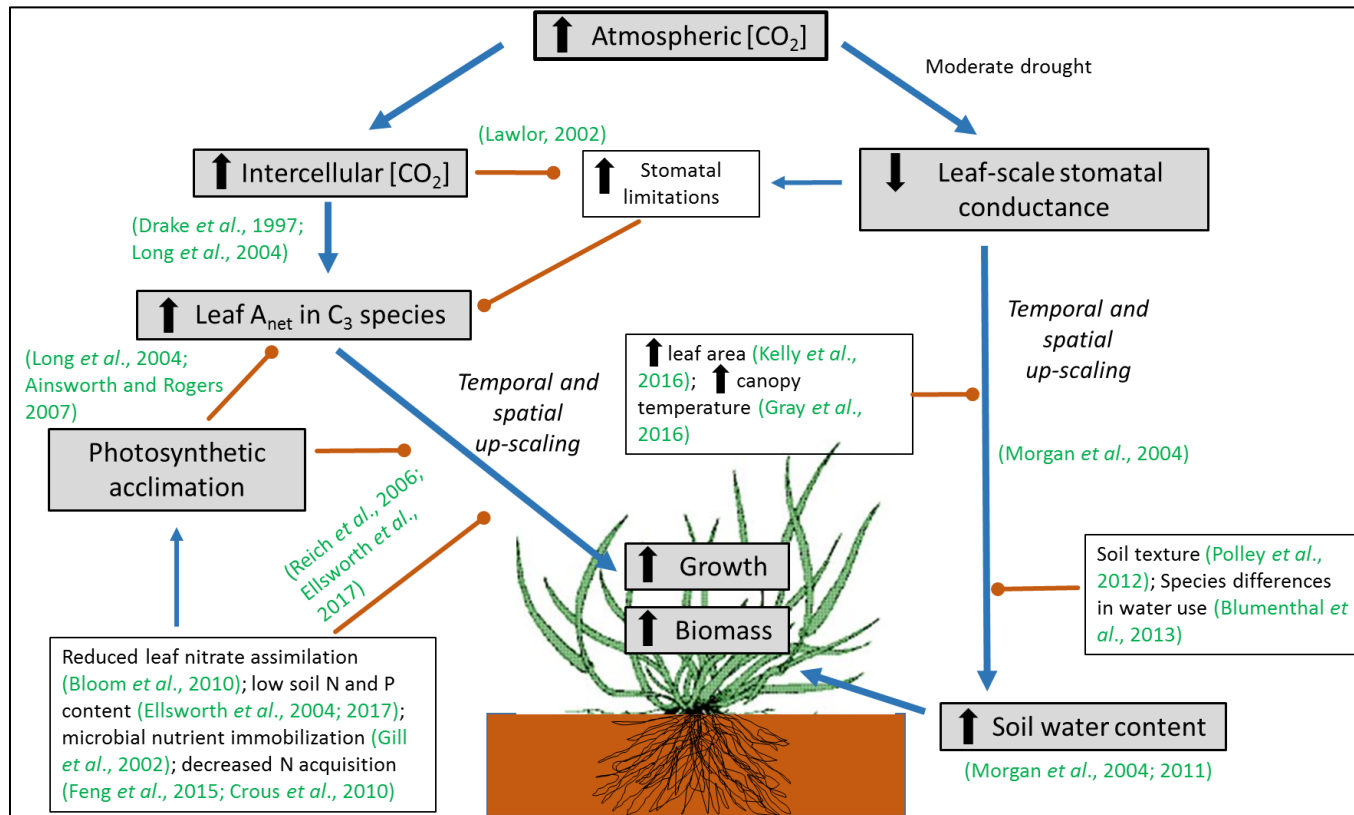


Fig. 1.1 Schematic representation of eCO₂ effects on the fundamental processes, that is, photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) and stomatal conductance leading to the pool of biomass and the pool of soil moisture, respectively.

Basic hypothesized effects of eCO₂ on the fundamental processes or pools are shown in grey boxes. Upward and downward pointing black arrows indicate increases and decreases, respectively, due to eCO₂. Blue arrows indicate promotion of the eCO₂ effect. Orange arrows indicate biotic and abiotic factors that may counteract/inhibit the eCO₂ effects. Key references are indicated in green

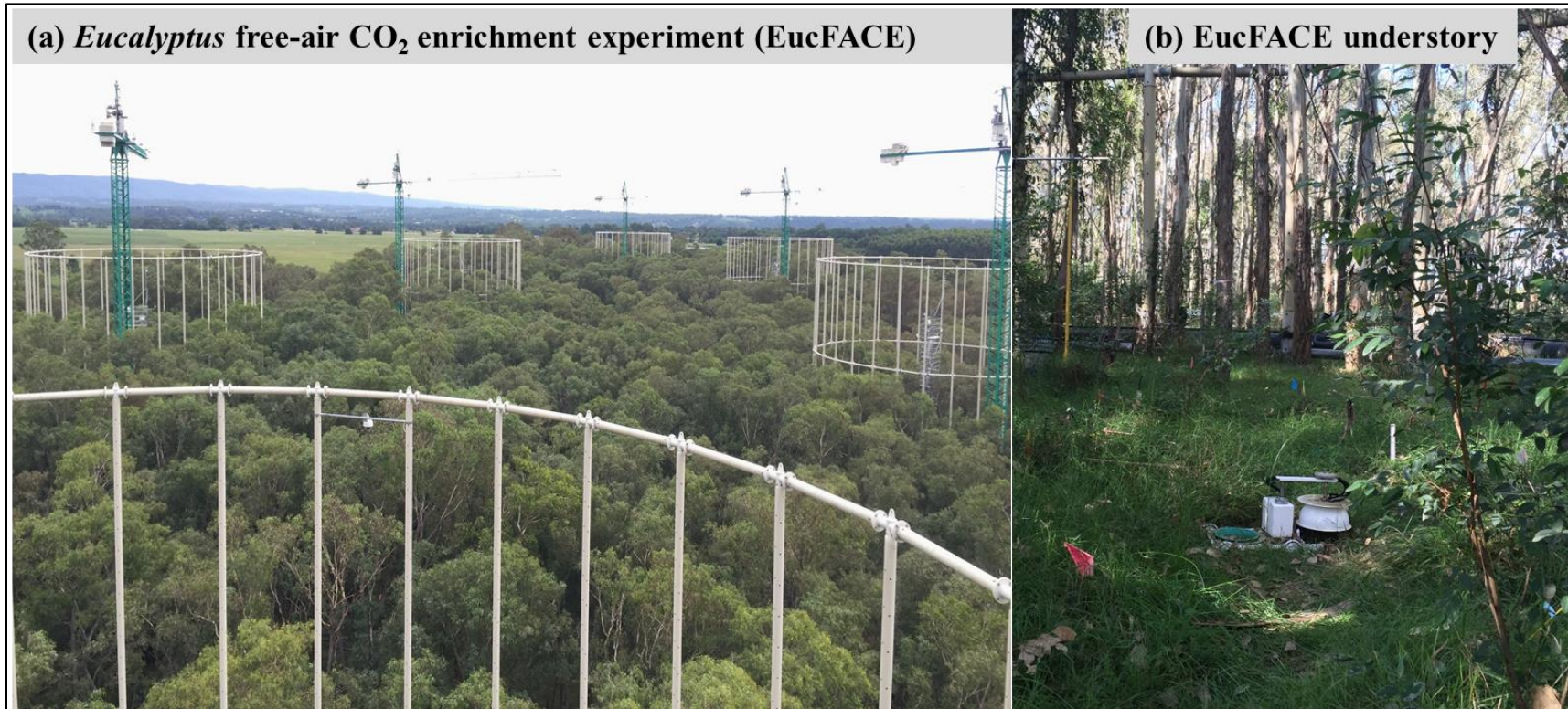


Image 1.1 *Eucalyptus* free-air CO₂ enrichment experiment (EucFACE).

(a) EucFACE is located in the native Cumberland Plain woodland ecosystem. The facility consists of three eCO₂ and three aCO₂ plots.
(b) Second image show the herbaceous understory of the EucFACE facility. Images were photographed by Ms. Varsha Pathare.



Image 1.2 Herbaceous plant species used in the current study.

(a) *Microlaena stipoides* Labill. - a native, evergreen C₃ grass growing naturally at the EucFACE. (b) *Nasella neesiana* (Trin. & Rupr.) Barkworth - an invasive, evergreen C₃ grass growing in a pot during the glasshouse experiment. (c) *Lobelia purpurascens* R.Br. - a native, evergreen C₃ forb growing naturally at the EucFACE. (d) *Senecio madagascariensis* Poir. - an invasive, evergreen C₃ forb growing naturally at the EucFACE. Images were photographed by Ms. Varsha Pathare.

Chapter 2 : Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland

This Chapter has been published in the journal of Global Change Biology as:

Pathare VS, Crous KY, Cooke J, Creek D, Ghannoum O, Ellsworth DS (2017) Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland. *Global Change Biology*, **23**, 5164-5178. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13778>.

This thesis includes a revised version of above publication.

2.1 Abstract

Elevated atmospheric CO₂ (eCO₂) is expected to reduce the impacts of drought and increase photosynthetic rates via two key mechanisms: first, through decreased stomatal conductance (g_s) and increased soil water content (V_{SWC}) and second, through increased leaf internal CO₂ (C_i) and decreased stomatal limitations (S_{lim}). It is unclear if such findings from temperate grassland studies similarly pertain to warmer ecosystems with periodic water deficits. I tested these mechanisms in three important C₃ herbaceous species in a periodically dry *Eucalyptus* woodland and investigated how eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement varied with seasonal water availability, over a three-year period.

Leaf photosynthesis increased by 10-62% with a 150 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ increase in atmospheric CO₂ across seasons. This eCO₂-induced increase in photosynthesis was a function of seasonal water availability, given by recent precipitation and mean daily V_{SWC} . A photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ of > 30% was observed during the most water-limited periods, e.g., with $V_{SWC} < 0.07$ in this sandy surface soil. Under eCO₂ there was neither a significant decrease in g_s in the three herbaceous species, nor increases in V_{SWC} , indicating no ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂. Periods of low V_{SWC} showed lower g_s (less than $\approx 0.12 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$), higher relative S_{lim} (> 30%) and decreased C_i under the ambient CO₂ concentration (aCO₂), with leaf photosynthesis strongly carboxylation-limited. The alleviation of S_{lim} by eCO₂ was facilitated by increasing C_i , thus yielding a larger photosynthetic enhancement during dry periods. I demonstrated that water availability, but not eCO₂, controls g_s and hence the magnitude of photosynthetic enhancement in the understory herbaceous plants. Thus, eCO₂ has the potential to alter vegetation functioning in a periodically dry woodland understory through changes in stomatal limitation to photosynthesis, not by the ‘water-savings effect’ usually invoked in grasslands.

2.2 Introduction

Grass-tree mixtures such as savannas and woodlands occupy extensive areas in tropical and sub-tropical regions and are characterised by strong seasonal variation in water availability (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Polley *et al.*, 1997). Due to the ongoing rise in atmospheric CO₂ these ecosystems are expected to undergo ecological changes via seedling establishment during dry periods (Bond & Midgley, 2000), changes in tree-grass interactions (Baudena *et al.*, 2015), woody plant encroachment (Higgins & Scheiter, 2012), and altered fire regimes from the build-up of organic matter (Bond & Midgley, 2012). These changes may have profound effects on the structure and functioning of savannas and woodlands, with potentially large but unquantified implications for their capacity to sequester carbon and regulate water balances (Huxman *et al.*, 2005, Prober *et al.*, 2012). In spite of their importance for local and regional carbon and water cycles (Higgins & Scheiter, 2012, Snyder *et al.*, 2004), there is a significant knowledge gap in responses of savannas and woodlands to elevated atmospheric CO₂ (eCO₂) concentrations (Leakey *et al.*, 2012). Consequently, the expected impacts of eCO₂ on these warm ecosystems have been based on findings from cold temperate ecosystems (Leakey *et al.*, 2012). Tropical and sub-tropical savannas and woodlands differ from cold temperate ones in important attributes like temperature, seasonal and total precipitation, maximal evapotranspiration and type of nutrient limitation (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013), suggesting different and potentially larger responses to eCO₂ in these ecosystems on the basis of being warmer and drier than northern hemisphere temperate systems (Hickler *et al.*, 2008). Both higher temperature and periodic low soil moisture have been hypothesized to increase the responsiveness to eCO₂ (Higgins & Scheiter, 2012, Morgan *et al.*, 2011). Hence, there is a need for experiments addressing effects of eCO₂ on woodlands, to improve our ability to predict their vulnerabilities to climate change and improve their representations in Earth system models (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Norby *et al.*, 2016).

In general, eCO₂ increases CO₂ assimilation rates and plant biomass, decreases stomatal conductance and leaf nitrogen concentrations and increases water-use efficiency (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Morgan *et al.*, 2011). However, the magnitude of these linked responses also depends on the availability of other resources such as soil nutrients and water (Rastetter & Shaver, 1992). Water availability is a primary factor limiting growth and productivity in many ecosystems

including grasslands (Knapp *et al.*, 2002), savannas and woodlands (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Polley *et al.*, 1997) so the response of these ecosystems to eCO₂ will in part depend upon water availability. One important way, through which eCO₂ is expected to ameliorate the negative impact of water-limitation is by stomatal closure resulting in decreased plant water use and increased soil water content (Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). The increase in soil water content under eCO₂, also termed a ‘water-savings effect’, has led to the generalisation that plant photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ will be strongest in dry conditions (Duursma & Medlyn, 2012, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012) though it is unclear if this best applies to short or long dry periods. Still, the generalisation has been used to rationalize why the eCO₂-induced enhancement response of deserts will be large (Jordan *et al.*, 1999), why arid and semi-arid zones have shown greening and shrub encroachment over the past 20 years (Ahlström *et al.*, 2015, Donohue *et al.*, 2013) and why the eCO₂-induced enhancement of grasslands is larger in dry vs. wet years (Owensby *et al.*, 1999). Hence, this particular phenomenon deserves closer investigation especially in water-limited ecosystems because even small increases in soil water content in dry climate zones can have significant effects on processes such as growing season length (Reyes-Fox *et al.*, 2014), nutrient mineralisation and organic matter decomposition (Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Wullschleger *et al.*, 2002), and survival of plants during dry periods (Bond & Midgley, 2012). Furthermore, earlier evidence from northern hemisphere temperate grasslands indicate that the extent, timing and duration of eCO₂-induced ‘water-savings effect’ varies (Morgan *et al.*, 2004) and may be determined by factors like species-specific water-use efficiencies (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Dijkstra *et al.*, 2010), changes in leaf area index and canopy temperature (Gray *et al.*, 2016, Kelly *et al.*, 2016), and soil texture (Fay *et al.*, 2012, Polley *et al.*, 2012a). Though the eCO₂-induced increase in soil water content has been demonstrated for temperate grasslands (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011), it has not been substantiated for warm-climate savannas or woodlands. These occur in zones where potential evapotranspiration can exceed mean annual precipitation, so that the ‘water-savings effect’ induced by eCO₂ may reduce such deficits.

Whilst tests of the ‘water-savings effect’ hypothesis largely emanate from a number of short-term glasshouse and controlled-environment studies (e.g., Dijkstra *et al.*, 2010, Polley *et al.*, 2012, Volk *et al.*, 2000), only a few field-based studies in

grasslands support the corollary that photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ are strongest in dry seasons or years (Belote *et al.*, 2004, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Niklaus & Körner, 2004). Some studies suggest that eCO₂ effect in terms of relative increases in photosynthesis and biomass can be strongest in wet years (Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Naumburg *et al.*, 2003, Newingham *et al.*, 2013, Smith *et al.*, 2000; but see Norby & Zak, 2011), since water stress may limit plant response to eCO₂ during severe dry periods. Water demand for herbaceous species varies seasonally (Knapp *et al.*, 2002) suggesting that the benefit of eCO₂-induced water-savings should differ across seasons on the basis of their differences in water availability (Hovenden *et al.*, 2014). An understanding of the relationship between seasonal water availability and eCO₂ effect is essential since large changes in the timing of rainfall in seasonally dry regions are anticipated by climate models, even where total annual rainfall will remain unchanged (Berg *et al.*, 2016, Sillmann *et al.*, 2013).

In addition to a ‘water-savings effect’, another important mechanism through which C₃ plants might benefit from CO₂ fertilisation during water limited periods is via alleviation of diffusional limitations (Lawlor, 2002). Stomatal closure, one of the first events to occur during water stress (Chaves *et al.*, 2002), results in significant limitations on plant CO₂ assimilation. This restriction of stomata to CO₂ supply, also termed as stomatal limitation, decreases leaf intercellular CO₂ concentrations (C_i) as well as photosynthetic rates (Grassi & Magnani, 2005, Lawlor, 2002). Thus, an important consequence of higher stomatal limitations in dry conditions is that plants operate on the steep linear phase of the photosynthetic CO₂ response curve (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012). Under such conditions, CO₂ fertilisation can help alleviate the stomatal limitations by increasing C_i and hence plants would experience larger photosynthetic enhancement (Kelly *et al.*, 2016, Lawlor, 2002). The importance of such limitations in controlling eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement during dry periods has been less studied in the field conditions (Galmés *et al.*, 2007, Grassi & Magnani, 2005)..

Building on knowledge from previous ecosystem studies (see Leakey *et al.*, 2012), I examined eCO₂ responses of an herbaceous understory community in the *Eucalyptus* Free Air CO₂ Enrichment Experiment (EucFACE). The EucFACE experiment is located in a mature, undisturbed *Eucalyptus* woodland in south eastern Australia which shows strong seasonal and inter-annual variability in precipitation (Gimeno *et al.*,

2016). The 30-year mean potential evapotranspiration exceeded precipitation by 40%, evidence that water deficits are frequent (Duursma *et al.*, 2016). These attributes provide a unique opportunity to test the mechanisms responsible for eCO₂ response in a periodically water-limited woodland ecosystem. I hypothesized that:

H1: Maximum photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ will be observed in dry seasons;

H2: This eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement will be mediated by a decrease in stomatal conductance in eCO₂ and hence increases in soil water content;

H3: Elevated CO₂ will reduce stomatal limitations induced by stomatal closure during the dry periods thus resulting in increased photosynthetic rates.

To test the above hypotheses, I measured leaf CO₂ assimilation and stomatal conductance of a dominant C₃ grass across seasons over three years, as well as corroborating evidence from two sympatric C₃ forbs over 1 ½ years.

2.3 Materials and Methods

2.3.1 Experimental design and site description

I conducted leaf level gas exchange measurements on herbaceous understory in the first three years of the *Eucalyptus* Free-Air CO₂ Enrichment (EucFACE) experiment (Image 2.1). EucFACE consists of six 25-m diameter circular plots or rings, with three of these maintained at ambient CO₂ (aCO₂) and three maintained at elevated CO₂ (ambient + 150 μmol mol⁻¹, eCO₂) since February 2013 (see Crous *et al.*, 2015 and Gimeno *et al.*, 2016). CO₂ treatment was completely randomised among the six plots at the outset. Ambient [CO₂] is constantly measured in the control rings. 150 ppm CO₂ is added to this measured value to get the set point for the eCO₂ rings. This is adjusted every second by the FACE Control Program (FCP). Also, CO₂ fumigation only occurs during daylight hours.

This experiment is located in a remnant patch of native Cumberland Plain Woodland (CPW) near Richmond, NSW Australia (33° 37' S, 150° 44.3' E) with substantial understory cover dominated by a C₃ grass, locally termed a grassy *Eucalyptus* woodland. I measured three common C₃ herbaceous understorey species in current study (see Image 1.2 and section 1.8 of Chapter 1 for species details): the dominant C₃ grass (*M. stipoides*) and two prevalent C₃ forbs (*L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*), denoted in figures by the genus initial and the first three letters of the species name.

The climate of the site is warm-temperate with a mean annual temperature of 17°C, characterised by a mean daily maximum temperature of 30.0°C during the warmest month (January) and 17.6°C during the coldest month (July) (http://www.bom.gov.au/climate/averages/tables/cw_067105.shtml) (Fig. 2.1a). It is seasonally water-limited with a 20-year average annual precipitation of 800 mm and an estimated annual pan evapotranspiration of 1350 mm (Australian Bureau of Meteorology, station 067105, 8 km from the site; www.bom.gov.au). Precipitation timing is variable, with larger monthly rainfall amounts received mostly during summers (December through February in southern hemisphere). However, substantial amounts of rainfall occur periodically throughout the year thus resulting in multiple seasonal wet-dry cycles (Fig. 2.1b). The soil at the site is a well-drained, sandy loam with low organic carbon content (Gimeno *et al.*, 2016). The soil is nutrient poor,

particularly strongly P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015). (see Crous *et al.*, 2015 and Hasegawa *et al.*, 2016 for details of soil N and P content).

2.3.2 Gas exchange measurements at EucFACE and model fitting

For measurements, the year was divided into four major seasons comprising summer (December to February), autumn (March to May), winter (June to August) and spring (September to November). Leaf level gas exchange measurements were conducted at four-time points per year, with each time point representing a season of the year. Measurements began, one week after initiation of full CO₂ fumigation, in February 2013 on *M. stipoides* as the dominant herbaceous species in the ecosystem, and two prevalent C₃ forb species (*L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*) were added starting from October 2014.

A set of portable infrared photosynthesis systems (Li-COR 6400XT; Li-COR Inc., Lincoln, NE, USA) with 6 cm² chambers were used for gas exchange measurements. In order to assess instantaneous and long-term effects of eCO₂ on the photosynthetic capacities of the species, photosynthetic CO₂ response curves ($A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curves) were measured, starting at the mean growth CO₂ concentration for each treatment ($\approx 400 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for aCO₂ and $\approx 550 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for eCO₂). Average daytime CO₂ concentrations at the ground layer 20 cm above the soil were $582 \pm 8.1 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$, measured at 8 points within each plot compared to the target of ambient + 150 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ (Craig McNamara, personal communication). Young active leaves were selected for measurement every season. Multiple non-overlapping leaves were placed across the Li-COR chamber and a minimum time of 15-min at light saturation was allowed for stabilisation of gas exchange before commencing measurements. After stabilisation, an initial measurement of net CO₂ assimilation rate (A_{net} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), stomatal conductance (g_s ; $\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), intercellular CO₂ (C_i ; $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$) and the ratio of intercellular to growth CO₂ (C_i/C_a) was conducted at growth CO₂ concentration, followed by the $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curves. $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curves for the three species were done with a minimum of ten different steps of CO₂ concentrations, ranging from 40 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ to 1800 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$, while maintaining saturating light conditions (photon flux density of 1800 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), 55 - 65 % relative humidity and prevailing leaf temperatures (T_{leaf} ; °C). During the $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ measurements, [CO₂] in the cuvette was controlled as reference. The canopy openings in this *Eucalyptus* woodland are

relatively large with tree canopy leaf area index < 2 (Duursma *et al.*, 2016) and the high intensity sun flecks ($> 1000 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) lasting about 30 min/day during summer and spring. Understory species rely on the sun flecks for achieving a majority of daily carbon gain (Chazdon & Pearcy, 1991). Hence, saturating light levels of $1800 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ were used for gas exchange measurements to better reflect the rates during sun flecks. T_{leaf} during the gas exchange measurement was controlled at the prevailing mean daily maximum air temperatures (T_{air}) during each measurement season (18, 22, 27 and 29 °C for winter, autumn, spring and summer respectively) (Fig. 2.1a). Measurements were taken during sunny days (09:30-14:30 local time) on fully expanded leaves exposed to sunlight. At least two measurements per CO_2 plot per species were undertaken at every time-point. Thus, 36 $A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ responses curves were measured every season (two $A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ responses curves per species per plot). All measurements were completed over the course of three days at the rate of 12 $A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ response curves per day whilst measuring six $A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ response curves from an $a\text{CO}_2$ plot and six from an $e\text{CO}_2$ plot. Three Li-COR 6400XT were used for gas exchange measurements during each time-point. All the three licors were user calibrated using a standard method mentioned in the licor manual. As a part daily warm-up tasks, licors were checked for flow meter zero, CO_2 and H_2O IRGA zeros and T_{leaf} zero. If required, IRGAs' were zeroed using fresh soda lime and drierite. To determine leaks, flow rate was set to $200 \mu\text{mol s}^{-1}$. With the chamber closed and empty, air was exhaled around the chamber gaskets to look for any fluctuations in the sample cell $[\text{CO}_2]$. Increase in sample CO_2 values by less than $1 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ suggested absence of leaks. New chamber gaskets were used for each time-point measurement. After each $A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ response curve, leaves were marked to assess the correct leaf area in the chamber, collected in self-sealing polythene bags, labelled and immediately placed on ice until further analyses. In the laboratory, the projected leaf area of the marked leaves in Li-COR 6400XT chamber was determined (Win Rhizo software, Regent Instruments Inc., Québec City, Canada) and gas exchange measurements were recalculated accordingly.

$A_{\text{net}}\text{-}C_i$ curves were then fit using the biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.* (1980), in order to obtain kinetic coefficients associated with rates of maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) and electron transport (J_{max} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$; see Crous *et al.*, 2013, Duursma, 2015). While estimating the rates of V_{cmax} and J_{max} I used a fixed mesophyll conductance value of $0.2 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ for the evergreen herbaceous species (Flexas *et*

al., 2008) to reflect the finite characteristics of this trait. The temperature responses of V_{cmax} and J_{max} are important to consider in model fitting (Medlyn *et al.*, 2002), especially as seasonal temperatures varied. In order to do this, I carried out temperature response measurements on *M. stipoides* following a procedure modified from Crous *et al.* (2013) (Supporting material; Supplementary methods for a description of the temperature response measurements). The temperature response of V_{cmax} was fit in R (v3.2.2, R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria) using the modified form of an Arrhenius function (peaked function; see Harley *et al.*, 1992 and Medlyn *et al.*, 2002). The resulting kinetics derived by fitting the modified Arrhenius function for V_{cmax} were used in the ‘*fitacis*’ function in the *plantecophys* package (Duursma, 2015) to obtain a temperature-normalised V_{cmax} ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) from the $A_{\text{net-C}_i}$ response curves.

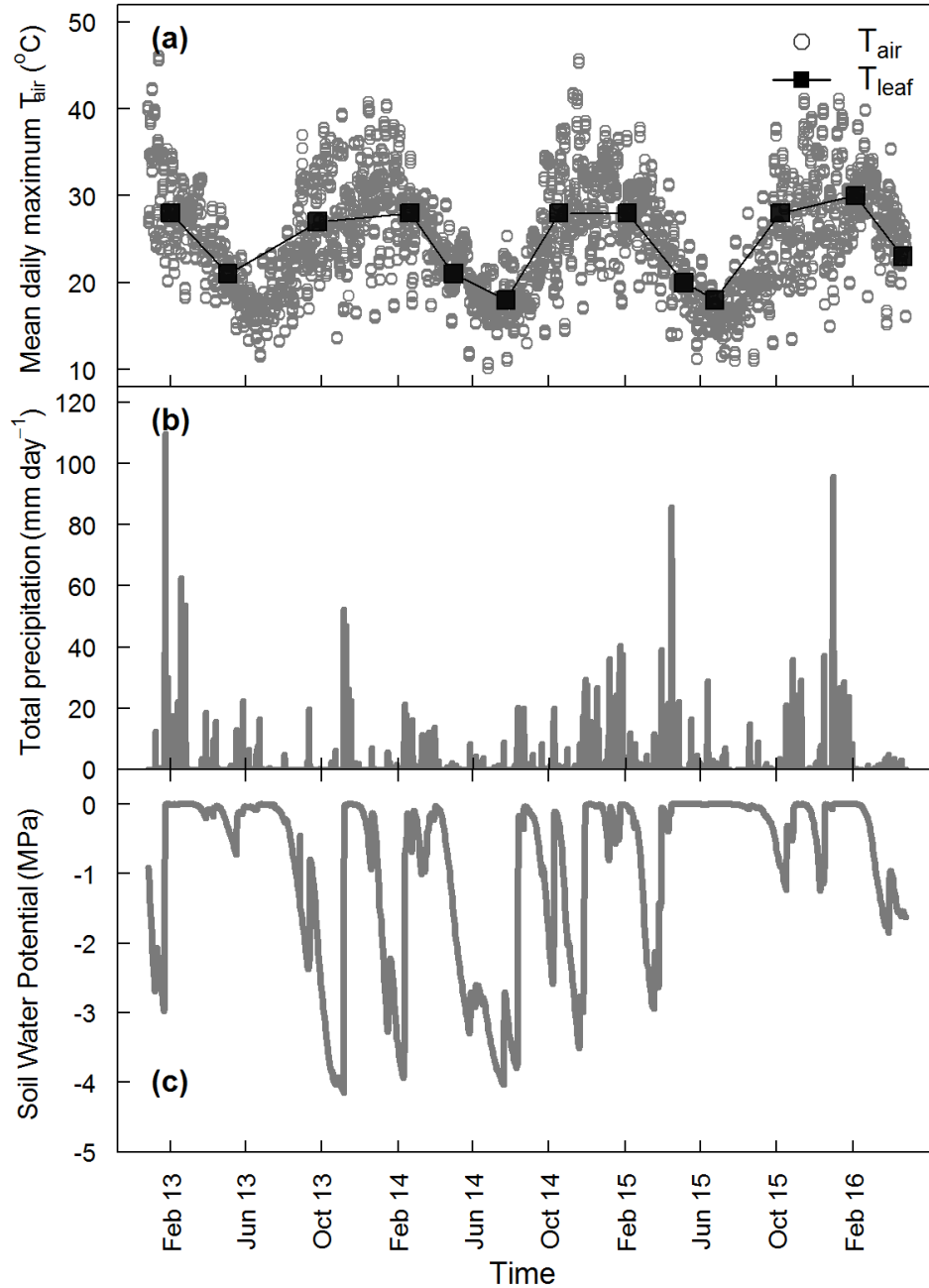


Fig. 2.1 Temperature, precipitation and soil water potential at EucFACE from February 2013 to May 2016.

Time course through the three measurement years for (a) daily maximum air temperature (T_{air} in $^{\circ}C$, open circles), and mean leaf temperature at the time of measurement (T_{leaf} in $^{\circ}C$, filled squares), (b) daily total precipitation received at the site, and (c) surface soil water potential (0-30cm depth). T_{leaf} is a mean of three understory species.

2.3.3 Relative stomatal limitations

Limitations to light saturated CO₂ assimilation rates primarily occur through restrictions to the diffusion of CO₂ into intracellular leaf spaces, in liquid-phase to the chloroplast, or due to the biochemistry of CO₂ fixation at the chloroplast. Among these, the gas-phase diffusional limitations to CO₂, also termed as stomatal limitation, is controlled by stomata and requires computing the theoretical rates for A_{net} assuming a fractional increase in g_s and C_i. Thus, relative stomatal limitations (S_{lim}; fraction of total) can be defined as the ratio of change in CO₂ assimilation resulting from changes in g_s to the total measured change in CO₂ assimilation resulting from the other processes (Wilson *et al.*, 2000). S_{lim} to photosynthesis were obtained by modelling the diffusional pathway and based on the A_{net}-C_i response curves. For calculating S_{lim} to CO₂ assimilation rates, I used the approach proposed by Grassi & Magnani (2005) which is similar to that defined in Jones, 1985. We computed S_{lim} as follows:

$$S_{lim} = \frac{\partial A_{net}/\partial C_i}{g_{sc} + \partial A_{net}/\partial C_i} \quad (\text{Eq.2.1})$$

where, $\partial A_{net}/\partial C_i$ is the partial derivative of net CO₂ assimilation (A_{net}) for a relative change in leaf internal CO₂ (C_i) and g_{sc} is the stomatal conductance to CO₂ (g_{sc} = g_s/1.6). My approach uses a static mesophyll conductance to CO₂ (g_{mes} of 0.2 mol m⁻² s⁻¹) as the study was focused at the whole-leaf scale, and the magnitude of S_{lim} is not strongly affected by the inclusion of mesophyll conductance effects (Grassi & Magnani, 2005).

In addition to S_{lim}, I also derived C_i difference using the A_{net}-C_i responses curves. C_i difference was calculated as the difference between the transition C_i (or C_i at the V_{cmax}-J_{max} transition point) and operating C_i (or C_i under growth CO₂ levels). It was thus an indicator of how high the operating C_i is on the linear slope of the A_{net}-C_i response curve.

2.3.4 Other field measurements

Values for mean daily T_{air} were obtained from a temperature and humidity sensor (HMP 155 Vaisala, Vantaa, Finland) located at 2 m above ground in all six plots, while values for total precipitation (mm day⁻¹) were obtained from automated tipping buckets (Tipping Bucket Rain gauge TB4, Hydrological Services Pty Ltd, Liverpool, NSW,

Australia) at the top of a tower in each of three plots. Data obtained from both sensor types were logged every 10 s and recorded every 15 min using CR3000 data loggers (Campbell Scientific, Townsville, Australia). In each of the six EucFACE plots (referred to as rings), three photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) sensors (LI-190; Li-COR, Lincoln, NE, USA) were installed on metal posts at one-m height and data was recorded every minute. Volumetric soil water content (V_{swc} ; v/v) was measured up to a depth of 30 cm with permanently installed time-domain reflectometry probes inserted into the soil at a 45° angle (CS650-L; Campbell Scientific, Logan, UT, USA). V_{swc} data was recorded at 15 min interval by a data logger in each plot (C3000; Campbell Scientific, Logan, UT, USA). Eight CS650-L soil moisture probes were installed per CO₂ plot thus allowing accurate and highly replicated measurements of V_{swc} . Campbell Scientific maintains that a soil-specific calibration is not required for the CS650-L soil moisture probes (<https://www.campbellsci.com/cs650>). Some important feature of CS650-L soil moisture probes are, lower error due to larger sample volume, measurement corrected for effects of soil texture and electrical conductivity and estimation of soil water content for a wide range of soil types. In the current study, I report the daily averages for the plot-average V_{swc} measurements under aCO₂ and eCO₂ treatments. In addition to V_{swc} , the field capacity for the top layer soil of the EucFACE facility was determined by using soil moisture release curves (Campbell & Norman, 2000) measured with pressure plates. Based on curve analysis, the field capacity and water potential of this sandy loam was determined to be 0.18 v/v and -0.006 MPa respectively.

2.3.5 Statistical analysis

Statistical analyses were performed using R (v3.2.2, R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria). The EucFACE facility consists of three ambient and three elevated CO₂ rings and hence the number of replicates was three for each of the two levels of CO₂ treatment. The overall dataset was unbalanced with regard to number of species measured and the measurement months. For *M. stipoides*, gas exchange measurements were carried out in at least two locations in each of the six rings across 13 measurement time points over 3 years. Similarly, for the other two C₃ species (*L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*), gas exchange measurements were carried out for seven measurement time-points (≈1.5 years). A mixed-model split-plot ANOVA

with interactions was performed for the physiological and biochemical parameters A_{net} , $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$, $J_{\text{max-25}}$, V_{cmax} , J_{max} , N content, g_s , C_i , S_{lim} and C_i difference, with CO_2 treatment as a whole-plot factor and measurement time point as a split-plot factor. Appropriate tests were conducted to check the data for normality and equal variances and wherever necessary, log or square root transformations were used to improve the homoscedasticity of data (Zar, 2007). Linear mixed effects models were fitted using the ‘*lme*’ function within the *nlme* package (Pinheiro *et al.*, 2016). Values of $P < 0.02$ were considered as statistically significant, because I used the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure for the number of tests I did to control the false discovery rate (Benjamini & Hochberg, 1995). In addition to the mixed level split-plot ANOVA, regression analyses were performed in order to examine the relationships between key variables of interest, particularly with regard to $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement. These key variables were chosen according to their causal hypothesized roles in regulating $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced photosynthetic enhancement (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012; see Supplemental information for further details). I also employed Structural Equation Modelling (SEM) approaches (Lamb *et al.*, 2011) to understand the processes underlying the relationships among variables describing photosynthetic enhancement by $e\text{CO}_2$ using the *lavaan* package in R (Rosseel, 2012) (see Supplemental Information). I used generalized additive models (*mgcv* package; Wood, 2006) to visualize the seasonal trends in V_{SWC} and test the differences between the CO_2 treatments during three years of this experiment. Although both C_i and S_{lim} are recursive variables depending on both A_{net} and g_s (Eq. 1), I included them in the structural equation models (Fig. 2.7 and Figs. S2.6 to S2.8) as they are key parts of the overall hypotheses asked.

Table 2.1 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for net photosynthesis (A_{net}), temperature normalised maximum carboxylation ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) and electron transport rates ($J_{\text{max-25}}$), N content on area basis (N_{area}), stomatal conductance (g_s), relative stomatal limitation (S_{lim}) and C_i difference as the difference between the transition C_i and operating C_i , across the three C_3 species measured for seven seasonal time points¹.

Results shown are across *M. stipoides*, *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*. CO_2 refers to the CO_2 treatment and time refers to the seasonal time points during which measurements were carried out. P -values for the split-plot ANOVA are shown in bold for significant effects when the false discovery rate is controlled using the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure. Three-way interactions were not statistically significant ($P > 0.02$) and hence are not shown in the table. The numerator degrees of freedom (df) are given for the statistical tests.

Variables	Source of variation													
	CO_2 (1, 4)		Season (2, 8)		Species (1, 12)		$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Season}$ (2, 8)		$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Species}$ (1, 12)		Season \times Species (2, 12)		$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Season} \times \text{Species}$ (2, 12)	
	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value	F -value	P -value
A_{net}	11.330	0.028	31.440	<0.001	21.700	0.001	0.580	0.578	0.083	0.777	2.520	0.122	0.890	0.433
$A_{\text{net-Ca}}$	1.730	0.258	3.770	<0.001	9.530	0.009	2.207	0.172	0.140	0.714	1.161	0.346	0.979	0.403
$V_{\text{cmax-25}}$	1.569	0.278	12.050	0.004	36.726	<0.001	6.148	0.024	0.809	0.386	0.751	0.492	2.591	0.116
$J_{\text{max-25}}$	0.574	0.491	13.820	0.003	33.570	<0.001	4.875	0.041	0.000	0.996	0.326	0.728	0.837	0.456
N_{area}	1.460	0.290	8.650	0.010	9.670	0.009	0.207	0.817	1.020	0.333	1.160	0.346	1.470	0.268
N_{mass}	1.060	0.361	4.160	0.057	27.350	<0.001	2.430	0.149	0.064	0.804	1.758	0.214	1.153	0.348
$f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$	0.037	0.857	2.770	0.121	24.930	<0.001	8.220	0.011	0.000	0.986	1.836	0.201	1.210	0.332
$J_{\text{max-25}}/V_{\text{cmax-25}}$	0.350	0.580	0.270	0.770	5.870	0.032	2.590	0.135	1.105	0.313	2.190	0.154	1.250	0.321
LMA	2.116	0.224	25.420	<0.001	2.659	0.129	1.257	0.335	0.434	0.522	0.760	0.491	3.480	0.064

¹All variables were transformed (square root or log transformation) to meet the normality assumptions for the mixed-model ANOVA.

2.4 Results

2.4.1 Effect of CO₂ and measurement time on A_{net} and g_s

M. stipoides was the dominant herbaceous species in the grassy woodland understorey, and thus it was measured more intensively than the other species. CO₂ enrichment by 150 μmol mol⁻¹ resulted in a significant increase in A_{net} (≈ 28%) across species measured for seven time points from 1.5 to 3 years after the start of CO₂ enrichment ($P = 0.009$, Table 1, Fig. 2.2a-c). Similarly, for the dominant *M. stipoides*, eCO₂ resulted in a significant increase in A_{net} (≈ 32%) across the 13 time points across three years ($P = 0.019$, Table S2.1, Fig. 2.2a). There was a significant measurement time effect on A_{net} across species ($P < 0.001$, Table 2.1 and S2.1, Fig. 2.2a-c) with average values ranging from $17 \pm 3.2 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ during the warmer times (October 2015 and February 2016) to $11 \pm 2.4 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ during the cooler time points (May 2015 and April 2016). For *M. stipoides*, maximum A_{net} ($12 \pm 1.5 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) occurred during the wet and warmer times (February 2013, February 2014, October 2014 and February 2015), with minimum A_{net} of $\sim 5 \pm 1.2 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ occurring in two dry periods, October 2013 and July 2014. I did not observe a significant CO₂ x measurement time effect on A_{net} across the three species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1 and S2.1). Similar to seasonal variation in A_{net}, the percent increase in photosynthetic rates due to eCO₂ also varied among seasonal time points, with values ranging from 12-53%. The maximum increase in photosynthetic rates due to CO₂ treatment across the species was observed during February 2016 (40%) and the minimum was observed in February 2015 (13%). Similarly, for the dominant *M. stipoides*, the maximum increase in A_{net} due to eCO₂ was observed in October 2013 (62%), whereas minimum increase was reported in February 2014 (13%). Overall, I observed a significant seasonal variation in the A_{net} values and the magnitude of eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement across all the species (Fig. 2.2a-c). I will now further look into the sources of the variations in seasonal photosynthetic enhancement.

There was no CO₂ treatment effect on g_s across the species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1, Fig. 2.2d-f). However, there were highly significant measurement time effects on g_s in all species ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and Table S2.1) with average values ranging from maximum of $0.27 \pm 0.03 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ in October 2015 and February 2016 to minimum

of $0.18 \pm 0.02 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ in May 2015 and April 2016. For *M. stipoides*, maximum g_s ($0.17 \pm 0.02 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$) was observed during warmer time points (February 2013, February 2014, October 2014 and February 2015), whereas, minimum g_s was observed in October 2013 and July 2014 as noted above for A_{net} . Given that higher A_{net} values were observed during time points with higher g_s (Fig. 2.2), the seasonal variation in A_{net} could be partly ascribed to seasonal variation in the g_s . This dependence of A_{net} on g_s is evident from the positive correlation between A_{net} and g_s for the three species under both, $a\text{CO}_2$ ($r^2 = 0.64$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. S2.1a) and $e\text{CO}_2$ ($r^2 = 0.57$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. S2.1b) concentrations.

2.4.2 Effect of water availability on A_{net} , g_s and $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement

Water supply and use is important to physiological activities of herbaceous species in other ecosystems (Knapp *et al.*, 2002). Thus, in order to understand the effect of water availability on A_{net} , g_s and $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement in the current study, these parameters were plotted as a function of seasonal water availability, determined as the recent week total precipitation and mean daily V_{SWC} (Fig. 2.3). The recent week for these measures was the seven days prior to the initiation of gas exchange measurements at the EucFACE. Fig. 2.3a-d shows the responses of A_{net} and g_s respectively, for the dominant *M. stipoides* species, with respect to seasonal water availability. Lower values for A_{net} ($< 9 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$; Fig. 2.3a, b) and g_s ($< 0.12 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$; Fig. 2.3c, d) were mostly observed during time points when recent week precipitation was $< 10 \text{ mm}$ (Fig. 2.3a, c) and mean daily V_{SWC} was $< 0.10 \text{ v/v}$ (Fig. 2.3b, d). Fig. 2.3e-h shows the effect of water availability on $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement. For all the C_3 species considered together, $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement was negatively correlated with both, total precipitation ($r^2 = 0.38$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.3e) and mean daily V_{SWC} ($r^2 = 0.49$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.3f) of the preceding week. Similarly, for *M. stipoides*, $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement was a decreasing function of total precipitation ($r^2 = 0.56$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.3g) and mean daily V_{SWC} ($r^2 = 0.64$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.3h) of the preceding week. Overall, a photosynthetic enhancement of $> 20\%$ under $e\text{CO}_2$ was observed during the relatively water-limited time points when the recent week total precipitation was $< 10 \text{ mm}$ and mean daily V_{SWC} was $< 0.10 \text{ v/v}$. Thus, there was evidence that water was an important regulator of A_{net} , g_s and $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced A_{net} enhancement.

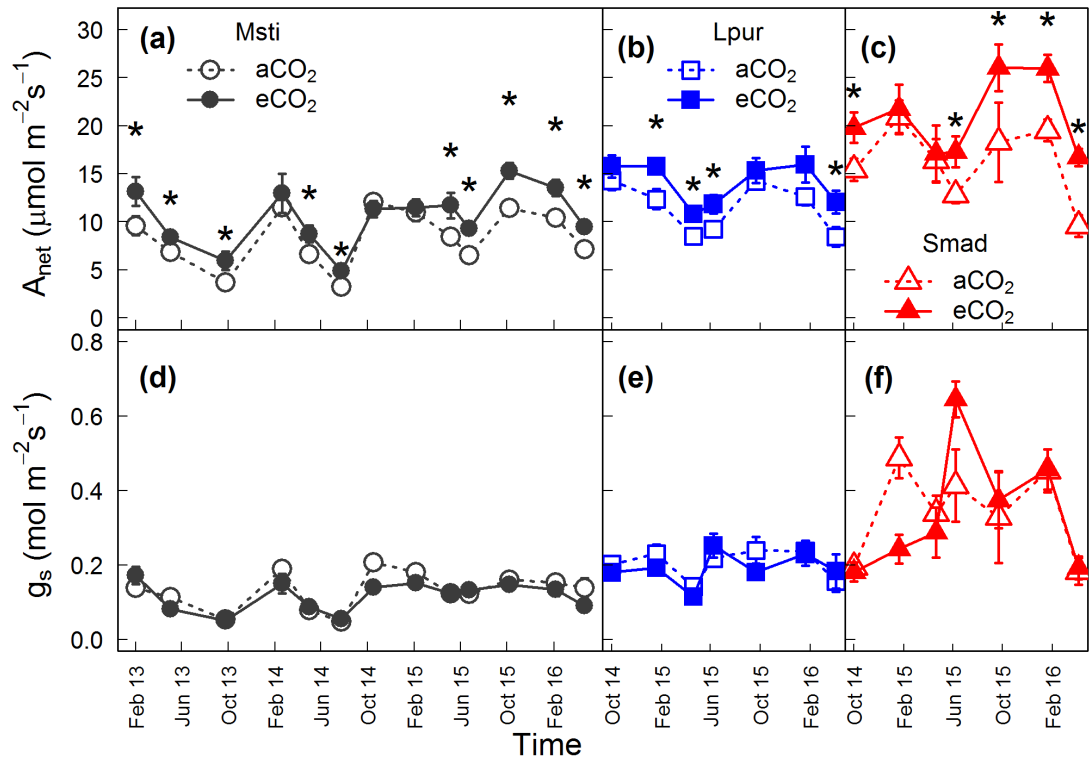


Fig. 2.2 Time course through the three measurement years for net CO₂ assimilation (A_{net}) and stomatal conductance (g_s) as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Time course is shown for (a) *M. stipoides* (Msti, black circles), (b) *L. purpurascens* (Lpur, blue squares) and (c) *S. madagascariensis* (Smad, red triangles). Open symbols indicate ambient CO₂ (aCO₂) and closed symbols indicate elevated CO₂ (eCO₂). The corresponding g_s is shown for (d) *M. stipoides*, (e) *L. purpurascens*, and (f) *S. madagascariensis*. When there was a significant overall CO₂ effect (Table 1.1), *post-hoc* treatment differences were denoted by * ($P < 0.05$; t-test).

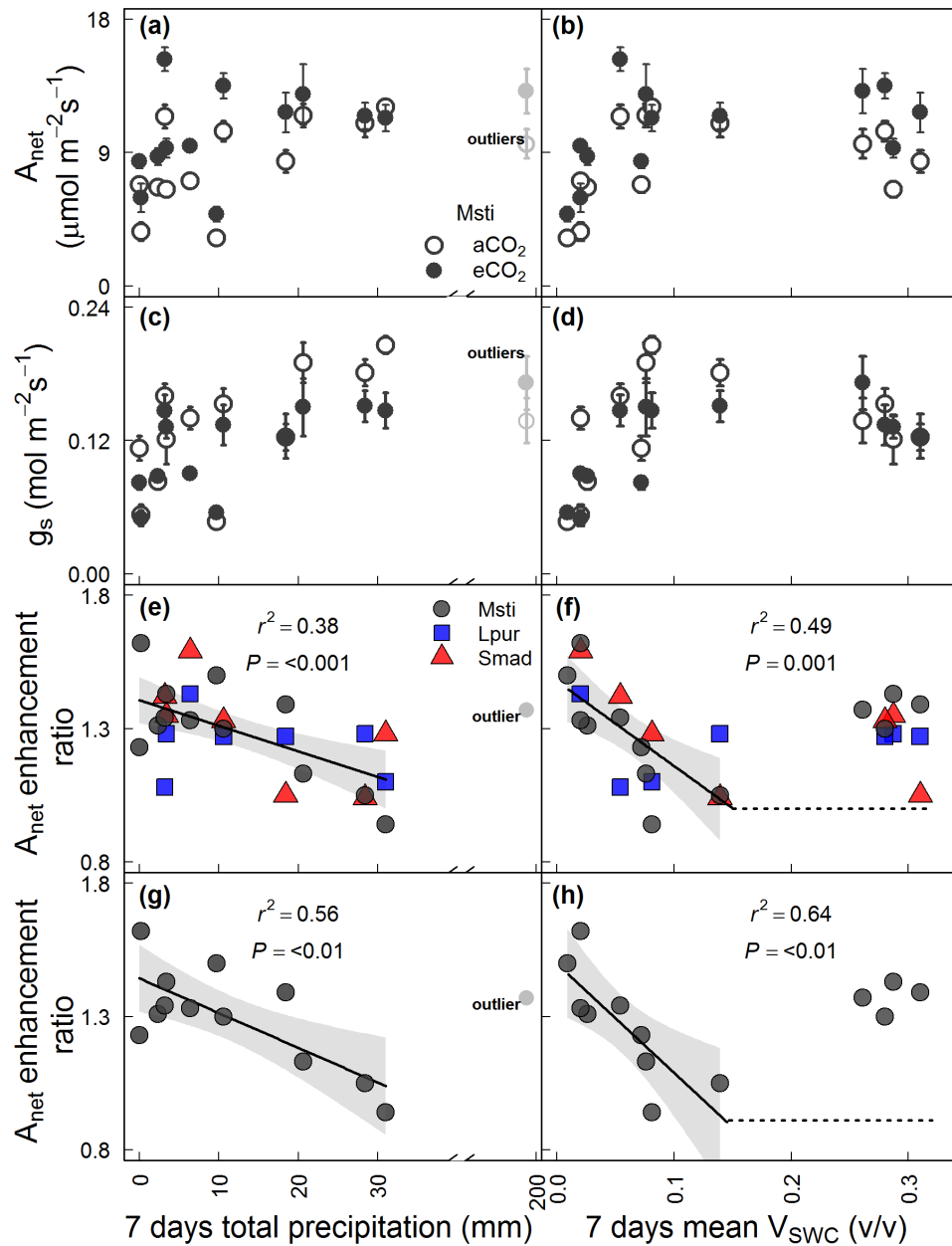


Fig. 2.3 Relationship of A_{net} , g_s and $e\text{CO}_2$ -induced relative A_{net} enhancement with weekly precipitation and V_{swc} .

(a, b) Seasonal A_{net} and (c, d) the corresponding seasonal g_s for *M. stipoides* along with (e, f) the A_{net} enhancement ratio for all three species, and (g, h) for *M. stipoides* only. A_{net} , g_s and A_{net} enhancement ratio are shown as a function of total precipitation (a, c, e and g) and mean daily volumetric soil water content (V_{swc} ; b, d, f and h) in the week preceding A_{net} measurements. In the legends, the three species are indicated as *M. stipoides* (Msti, black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur, blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad, red triangles). A_{net} enhancement ratio was calculated as mean A_{net} under $e\text{CO}_2$ divided by mean A_{net} under $a\text{CO}_2$. Gray shaded portions indicate 95% confidence intervals for the mean values. In panels f and h, a broken stick function is shown, with fit to the linear part below the field capacity for this soil (0.18 v/v).

2.4.3 Effect of CO₂ and measurement time on biochemical parameters

To understand the underlying biochemical regulation of A_{net} , I focused on V_{cmax} and J_{max} , the parameters that are derived from the photosynthesis model of Farquhar *et al.* (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980) and leaf N content. Though there was no significant CO₂ effect on the V_{cmax} and J_{max} values across the species ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.2 and S2.3, Fig. S2.3), I observed a highly significant measurement time effect on both the parameters ($P < 0.01$, Table S2.2 and S2.3). There was evidence of different species responses for these parameters (Fig. S2.3). Variation in V_{cmax} and J_{max} could be attributed to the variation in the measurement time weather conditions and the inherent temperature dependencies of these two biochemical parameters. Thus, V_{cmax} and J_{max} were normalized to a common standard temperature of 25 °C using the activation energy and entropy parameters derived from instantaneous temperature responses of *M. stipoides* as indicated in supplementary methods (see Supporting Material). Though there was a significant measurement time effect on the normalized parameters ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$) across the species ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.1, Fig. 2.4), they were less variable over measurement time compared to non-normalized V_{cmax} and J_{max} (Fig. S2.3). When averaged across the three species and CO₂ treatments, maximum values for $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ ($80 \pm 13.06 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $129 \pm 5.23 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) were observed in Oct'14 and Oct'15.

I did not observe a significant CO₂ effect on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ across the species ($P > 0.02$, Tables 2.1 and S2.1 and Fig. 2.4). However, there was a non-significant CO₂ x measurement time interaction effect on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ ($P < 0.1$, Tables 2.1 and S2.1 and Fig. 2.4). In particular, there was a trend towards lower $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ under eCO₂ during October 2014 in *M. stipoides* and during October 2014 and October 2015 in *L. purpurascens*. Trends similar to V_{cmax} and J_{max} were also observed for leaf N content. There were no significant CO₂ or CO₂ x measurement time interaction effects on the leaf N content (N_{area} and N_{mass}) across the three species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1 and S2.1, Fig. S2.4). However, I observed a significant measurement time effect of the leaf N content across the species and CO₂ treatments ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.1). Similarly, for *M. stipoides*, there were no statistically significant CO₂ and CO₂ x measurement time interaction effects on N_{area} ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.1, Fig. S2.4a) and N_{mass} ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.3, Fig. S2.4d). However, leaf N content of *M. stipoides* varied significantly with time across the CO₂ treatments ($P < 0.01$, Table

S2.1 and S2.3). Overall, across the species I did not observe a significant change in any of the measured biochemical parameters under eCO₂, though individual species varied in this regard.

2.4.4 Effect of CO₂ and measurement time on V_{swc}

There was no significant CO₂ treatment effect on the mean daily V_{swc} during the three years of this experiment, indicated by overlapping confidence intervals (Fig. 2.5b). Also, mean daily V_{swc} during the weeks preceding gas exchange measurements was similar between aCO₂ and eCO₂ ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.4). However, V_{swc} varied substantially during the course of this study and there were several seasonal wet-dry periods (Fig. 2.5a). During a substantial amount of time (average 14 days per month or $\approx 50\%$ of the time), V_{swc} was < 0.10 v/v (Fig. 2.5a). Thus, the EucFACE facility experienced frequent dry periods during the duration of measurements. Overall, there were no significant CO₂ x measurement time interaction effects on mean daily V_{swc} during the three years of measurement period indicated by overlapping confidence intervals in Fig. 2.5b as well as during the week preceding the gas exchange measurements across all the 13 measurement time points ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.4).

2.4.5 Effect of CO₂ and measurement time on diffusional parameters

Elevated CO₂ resulted in a significant increase in C_i ($391 \pm 27 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$) compared to aCO₂ ($288 \pm 15 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$) across the three species ($P < 0.01$, Table S2.2 and S2.3, data not shown). However, this increase was not accompanied by a corresponding increase in the C_i/C_a ratio ($P > 0.02$, Table S2.2 and S2.3). Both C_i and C_i/C_a varied significantly with measurement time across the species ($P < 0.001$, Table S2.2 and S2.3). A result of increased atmospheric CO₂ and hence increased C_i, but no change in C_i/C_a, should be a reduction in S_{lim} and C_i difference under eCO₂, as leaves operate closer to the CO₂ saturation for A_{net}. I therefore examined the responses of S_{lim} and C_i difference across the species (Fig. 2.6). There was no significant CO₂ effect on S_{lim} across the three species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1 and S2.1, Fig. 2.6a-c). However, there was a highly significant measurement time effect on S_{lim} across the CO₂ treatments and species ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.1). Since there was a trend towards higher S_{lim} during the dry time points (Fig. 2.6a-c) when values for A_{net} (Fig. 2.2a) and g_s (Fig. 2.2b) were lower, I plotted S_{lim} as a function of water availability measured by total

precipitation and mean daily V_{SWC} of preceding week (Fig. S2.5). S_{lim} was a decreasing function of V_{SWC} across the species ($r^2 = 0.33$, $P = 0.016$, Fig. S2.5b) and for *M. stipoides* ($r^2 = 0.55$, $P = 0.02$, Fig. S2.5d). Thus, higher S_{lim} were observed during periods of low water availability or when V_{SWC} was < 0.10 v/v (Fig. S2.5b, d). Though the S_{lim} were similar between aCO₂ and eCO₂ treatments (Fig. 2.6a-c), I observed a significant decrease in C_i difference under eCO₂ across the species ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.1, Fig. 2.6d-f) indicating that plants in eCO₂ operated higher on the linear part of the $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curve. I did not observe a highly significant measurement time effect on C_i difference across CO₂ treatments and three species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1). However, there were significant measurement time effects on C_i difference of *M. stipoides* ($P < 0.01$, Table S2.1, Fig. 2.6d). Higher average C_i difference was evident during the time points with higher relative S_{lim} (Fig. 2.6). I expected that there would be a two-way interaction between CO₂ and time on C_i difference, but overall there was no significant CO₂ x measurement time interaction effect on S_{lim} and C_i difference across the species ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1 and S2.1). Taken together, higher relative S_{lim} and C_i difference were evident during water-limited time points (Fig. S2.5), suggesting that these diffusional factors may be responsible for seasonal variation in eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement. Further evidence of this comes from a set of physiologically-based causal hypotheses laid out in a structural equation model (Fig. 2.7, see Supporting Material for details). There was no significant CO₂ treatment effect on g_s ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1). However, overall seasonal variation in g_s did affect the photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ which was mediated through the S_{lim} .

2.4.6 Relation between S_{lim} and A_{net} enhancement by eCO₂

To obtain a greater insight into the role of diffusional factors in controlling seasonal variation in eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement I further plotted A_{net} enhancement ratio as a function of S_{lim} (Fig. 2.8a) and C_i difference (Fig. 2.8b) under aCO₂ conditions. The eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement was positively correlated with S_{lim} at aCO₂ conditions across the species ($r^2 = 0.39$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.8a) and for *M. stipoides* ($r^2 = 0.63$, $P < 0.01$). Similar to S_{lim} , I observed a strong positive correlation between eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement and C_i difference at aCO₂ across the species ($r^2 = 0.44$, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 2.8b) and for *M. stipoides* ($r^2 = 0.64$, $P < 0.01$). Overall, maximum

enhancement in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ were observed when S_{lim} and C_i difference were higher under aCO₂ conditions.

2.4.7 Species effects and higher-order interactions

The split-plot ANOVA (CO₂ x measurement time x species) for the seven time points, during which all three species were measured, indicated that species differed significantly in most of the measured physiological and biochemical parameters ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.2). When averaged across CO₂ treatments and seven measurement time points, I observed higher values for A_{net} and g_s (Fig. 2.2) in *S. madagascariensis* ($18.5 \pm 4.4 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $0.34 \pm 0.13 \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, respectively) than the other species (average A_{net} was $12 \pm 2.7 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $9.4 \pm 3.12 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ for *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides*, respectively). A similar trend was observed for the biochemical parameters like V_{cmax-25} and J_{max-25} (Fig. 2.4), V_{cmax} and J_{max} (Fig. S2.3) and leaf N content (Fig. S2.4), with rates for the former ranking *S. madagascariensis* > *L. purpurascens* > *M. stipoides*. Species also differed significantly in all the diffusional parameters ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.2) except for S_{lim} ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1, Fig. 2.6a-c) which was similar across the three species ($\approx 33\%$) as expected given that it is a relative measure that already accounts for intrinsic physiological rates. I observed a significant species x CO₂ interaction effect only for two variables ($P < 0.01$, Table 2.1 and S2.2), as *S. madagascariensis* had higher values for J_{max-25} (Fig. 2.4f) and J_{max} (Fig. S2.3f) under eCO₂ than for all other cases. Compared to *M. stipoides*, the biochemical (J_{max}, V_{cmax-25}, J_{max-25}) and diffusional (g_s, C_i, C_i/C_a, and S_{lim}) parameters varied substantially with season in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*. Overall, there were no statistically significant three-way interaction effects (CO₂ x measurement time x species) on any of the measured physiological and biochemical parameters in the current study ($P > 0.02$, Table 2.1 and S2.2).

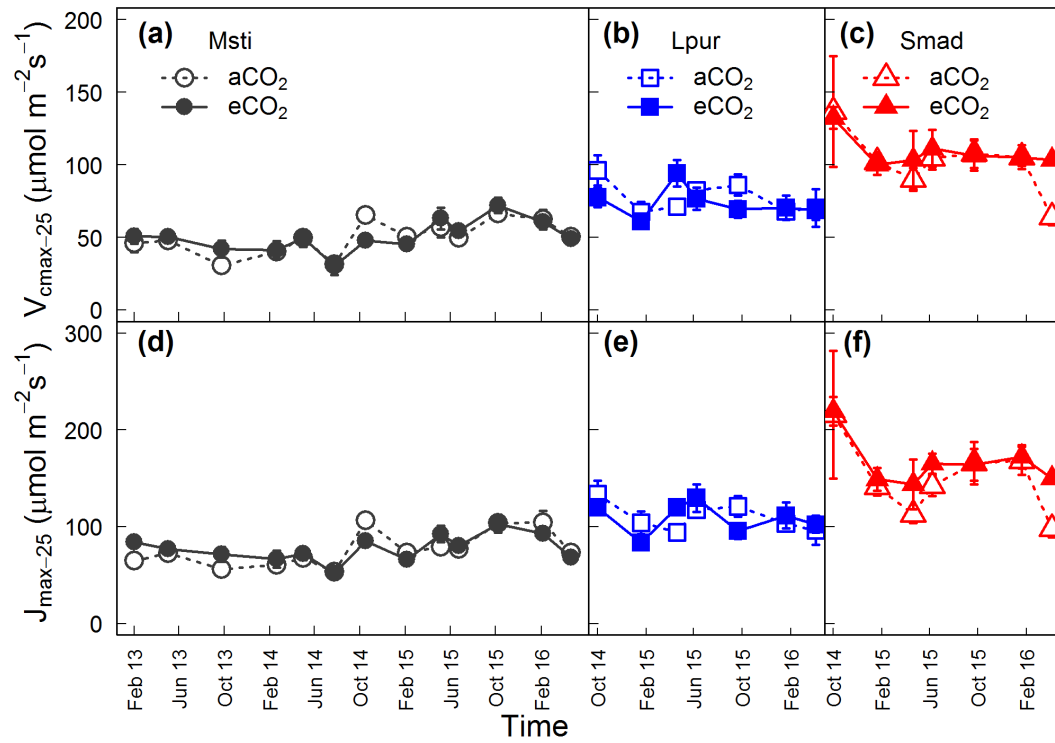


Fig. 2.4 Time course through the three measurement years for maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) as a function of CO_2 treatment.

The rates have been normalised to a standard leaf temperature of 25 °C, indicated by (a, b and c) $V_{cmax-25}$ and (d, e and f) J_{max-25} , respectively. These parameters are shown for *M. stipoides* (Msti; a,d; black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur; b, e; blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad; c, f; red triangles).

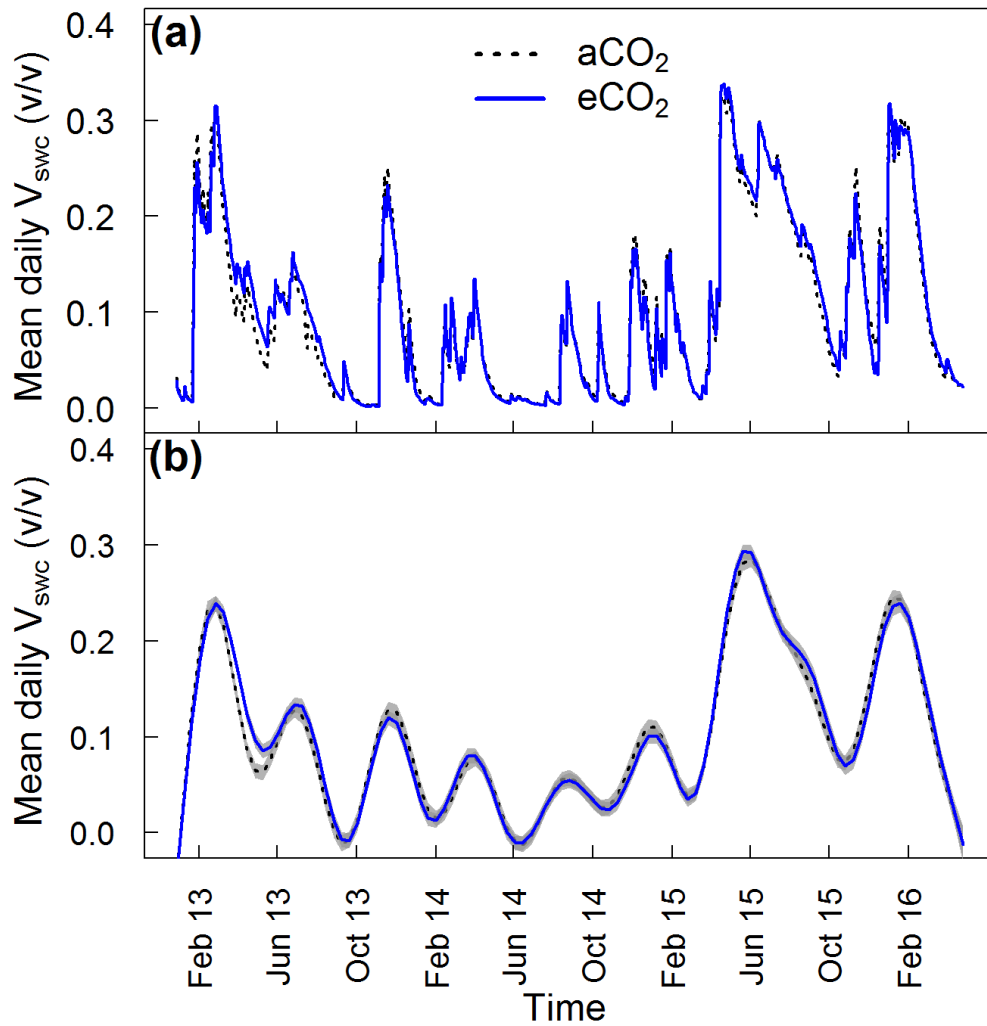


Fig. 2.5 Time course through the three measurement years for mean daily V_{swc} content as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Panel (a) indicates V_{swc} under aCO₂ (black dashed line) and eCO₂ (blue solid line) and (b) indicates smoothed regressions with 95% confidence intervals (gray areas) around the smooth terms for V_{swc} under aCO₂ and eCO₂.

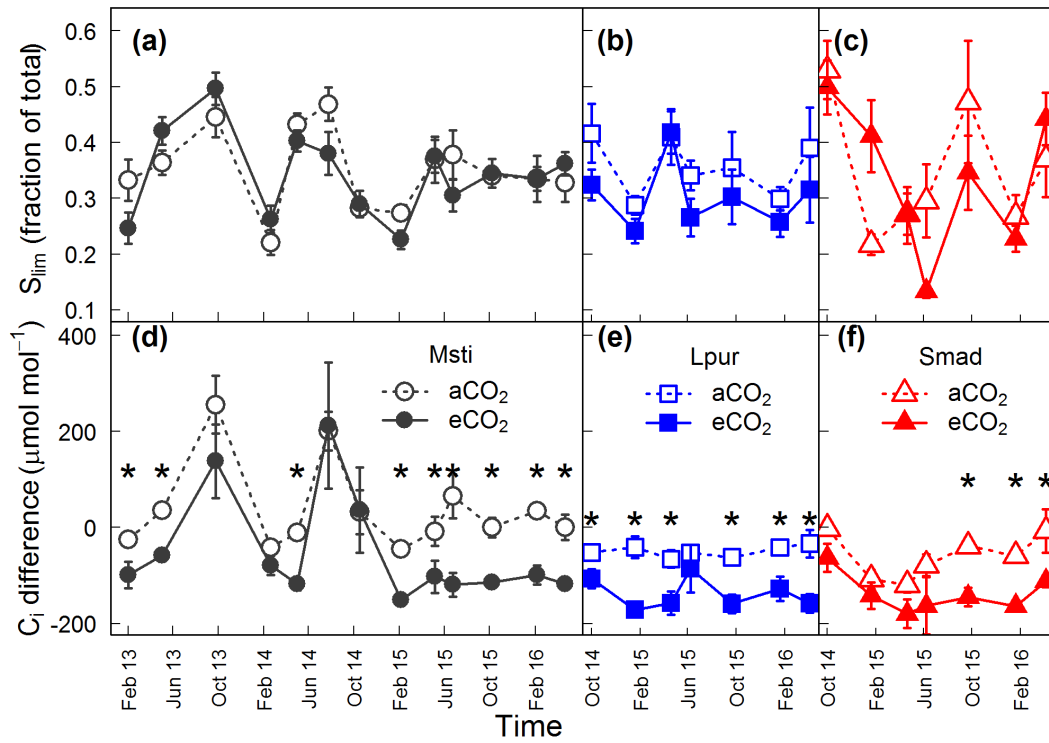


Fig. 2.6 Time course of relative stomatal limitations (S_{lim}) and the difference between operating C_i and transition C_i (C_i difference) as a function of CO_2 treatments.

These parameters are shown for *M. stipoides* (Msti; a, d; black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur; b, e; blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad; c, f; red triangles). When there was a significant overall CO_2 effect (Table 1), *post-hoc* treatment differences were denoted by * ($P < 0.05$; t-test).

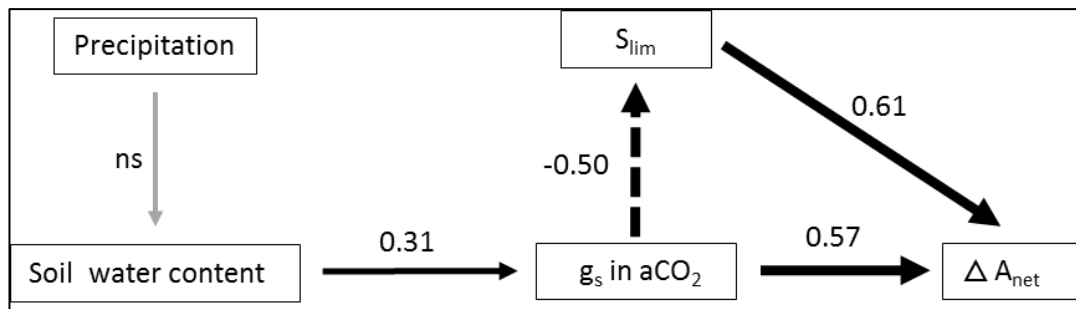


Fig. 2.7 The fitted structural equation model (SEM) depicting causal hypotheses underlying the photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ for herbaceous species measured at discrete points in the EucFACE experiment.

Significant standardized path coefficients ($P < 0.05$) are shown near each arrow, with the width of the line proportional to the size of the standardized coefficients. The dashed line denotes a negative relationship, and non-significant pathways are indicated in grey. ΔA_{net} denotes the absolute enhancement of A_{net} by eCO₂ with similar outcomes for the same model using the relative enhancement of A_{net} .

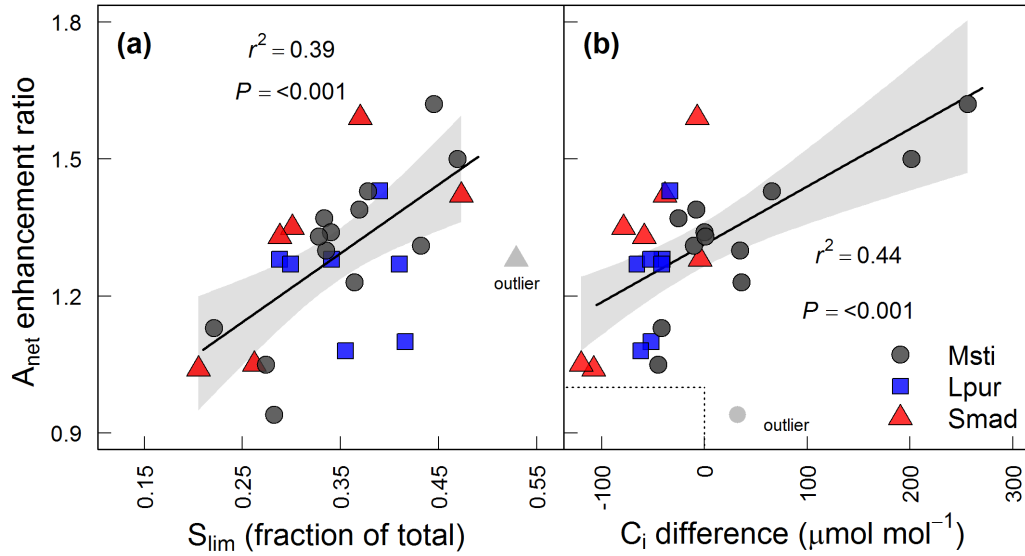


Fig. 2.8 The relative A_{net} enhancement ratio as a function of (a) S_{lim} (fraction of total limitations), and (b) C_i difference for all three species.

The species are *M. stipoides* (black circles), *L. purpurascens* (blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (red triangles). In (b), the dashed box in the lower left-hand corner of the panels denotes the null hypothesis of no A_{net} enhancement in $e\text{CO}_2$. Gray shaded portions in panels (a) and (b) indicate 95% confidence intervals for the mean values, and the same outlier as shown in Fig. 2.3 is denoted.

2.5 Discussion

During three years of this study, photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ were almost 30% higher on average (Fig. 2.2). However, the relative enhancement in photosynthetic rates by eCO₂ across species varied substantially between seasons, with values ranging from 12-53%. I investigated the mechanisms underlying the seasonal variation in photosynthetic responses to eCO₂ in three herbaceous C₃ species from a periodically dry *Eucalyptus* woodland, with a focus on water availability and stomatal limitations, recognizing that this would be the driver for biomass accumulation responses that will be tested later in this thesis (Chapter 3). My first hypothesis was supported, as I observed maximum photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ during the dry periods ($V_{\text{SWC}} < 0.07$). In contrast to the second hypothesis, I did not observe a significant increase in V_{SWC} under eCO₂ or decrease in stomatal conductance. The results indicate that eCO₂ induced photosynthetic enhancement during dry periods was the result of alleviation of stomatal limitation by increasing C_i , thus supporting the third hypothesis.

2.5.1 Maximum eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement is observed during dry periods

The grassy *Eucalyptus* woodland in this study experienced frequent seasonal wet and dry periods (Fig. 2.1b and Fig. 2.5a). Since herbaceous species respond quickly to events of water availability (Knapp *et al.*, 2002), water was expected to be an important environmental factor controlling growth, productivity and probably the eCO₂ response in the herbaceous species of this ecosystem. The relationship between seasonal water availability (total precipitation and mean daily V_{SWC} of preceding week) and eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement (Fig. 2.3e-h) indicated that maximum eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement occurred during relatively dry periods, that is, when the total precipitation in the week preceding the measurements was < 10 mm (Fig. 2.3e, g) or the mean daily V_{SWC} was < 0.10 v/v (Fig. 2.3f, h). Similar relationships have been observed between A_{net} enhancement ratio and soil water content by Lecain *et al.* (2003) and between biomass enhancement and precipitation by Morgan *et al.* (2004), both for herbaceous species from temperate grasslands. The relationship between A_{net} enhancement ratio and seasonal water availability in the current study is in agreement with these previous reports, and support my first hypothesis.

How is seasonal water availability related to the eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement and its variability? I argue that this relationship emerges out of stomatal control of photosynthetic rates across a range of soil moistures. Previous studies addressing the interaction effects of eCO₂ and drought (Kelly *et al.*, 2016, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Niklaus & Körner, 2004) indicate that eCO₂ can mitigate the impact of water-limitation via two key mechanisms; first, decreased g_s under eCO₂ resulting in increased soil water content or ‘water-savings effect’ and second, lower g_s and higher S_{lim} during drought resulting in increased C_i and hence A_{net} under eCO₂. I evaluated these two mechanisms and discuss them in the following sections.

2.5.2 Elevated CO₂ does not increase soil water content

Previous studies in water-limited temperate ecosystems have reported improved photosynthetic rates and productivity under eCO₂ during dry conditions, generally attributed to decreased g_s and the linked increase in soil water content (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004), called the ‘water-savings effect’. Although I observed the maximum CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in dry periods (Fig. 3e-h), stomatal conductance (g_s) did not significantly decrease under eCO₂ (Fig. 2.2d-f) even during dry periods (Fig. 2.3c, d). Stomatal conductance showed significant variation across seasons, but was similar under both aCO₂ and eCO₂ conditions (Fig. 2.2d-f), thus indicating that plants under both CO₂ treatments were constrained by the same diffusional limitations. Also, there was no detectable increase in mean daily V_{swc} under eCO₂ compared to aCO₂ at any time point during three years of this study, not even during the dry periods when I expected a significant increase in V_{swc} (Fig. 2.5). Unlike temperate ecosystems (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004), the ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ was absent in the understory and upper soil layer of this sub-tropical grassy *Eucalyptus* woodland, rejecting our second hypothesis. Thus, I do not expect such an effect on plant biomass accumulation for the grassy understory, though this remains to be tested later in this thesis (Chapter 3). The *Eucalyptus* woodland ecosystem in the current experiences an average annual precipitation of 800 mm. Thus, this ecosystem is not particularly dry compared to the previous studies from arid environments (annual precipitation < 400 mm) reporting

increases in soil water content (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Lecain *et al.*, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011). This could be a contributing factor in the non-significant effects of eCO₂ on soil water content reported in the current study.

The ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ has been expected to affect the structure and functioning of savannas and grassy woodlands through feedbacks on species composition, partly through the establishment of woody plant seedlings and tree-grass interactions (Bond & Midgley, 2012, Polley *et al.*, 1997). For instance, the ‘water-savings effect’ could favour the establishment of woody plant seedlings that were previously excluded due to low water availability (Polley *et al.*, 1997) or could help lengthen the growing season, thus reducing the period when fires can occur (Bond & Midgley, 2012). An invasive grass, *Microstegium*, responded differently between years to eCO₂ in a temperate plantation, which may have been due to interannual differences in soil moisture interacting with eCO₂ (Belote *et al.*, 2004). However, the above predictions might not be true in the case of warm temperate grassy woodlands with periodic drought, as there was no evidence of eCO₂-induced water savings in the current study. Previous studies addressing the effects of eCO₂ on plant-water relations suggest that the C₄ species will benefit more from decreased stomatal conductance and increased soil water content, whereas C₃ species would benefit from a direct stimulation of photosynthetic rates due to increase in C_i (Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004). I speculate that the dominance of C₃ species in the understory at our site may have been a factor responsible for the lack of soil water-savings, as suggested previously by Morgan *et al.* (2004).

2.5.3 Higher stomatal limitations and A_{net} enhancement by eCO₂ during dry periods

Given that I did not find decreased stomatal conductance in eCO₂ and hence no ‘water-savings effect’, I investigated the possibility of changed stomatal limitations in eCO₂. S_{lim} reflects a complex function of both net CO₂ assimilation rates and stomatal conductance provides clarity about how these two processes balance with regard to the absolute photosynthetic enhancement in eCO₂. Lower g_s (Fig. 2.3d) and consequently higher S_{lim} (Fig. S2.5b, d) were observed during the water-limited periods than during wet periods. From this I infer that water availability controlled the variability in S_{lim} to photosynthesis as depicted in the path analysis in Figure 2.7. A similar relationship was previously observed between soil water content and diffusional limitation by

Grassi & Magnani (2005). A consequence of higher S_{lim} observed during water-limitation is a decrease in C_i and A_{net} with plants operating deeper in the carboxylation-limited zone. At such low C_i 's, CO_2 fertilisation can facilitate the alleviation of S_{lim} by increasing C_i , thus generating a larger photosynthetic enhancement during dry periods (Lawlor, 2002). In support to this prediction, I observed maximum increase in photosynthetic rates under eCO_2 when S_{lim} were higher under aCO_2 concentrations (Fig. 2.8a). A similar relationship was observed between eCO_2 -induced A_{net} enhancement and C_i difference (Fig. 2.8b). The C_i difference is a measure of how high the operating point is, relative to a transition away from carboxylation limitation to photosynthesis. Larger C_i difference indicates that plants have more capacity to increase carboxylation with increased atmospheric CO_2 concentrations. Thus, eCO_2 enables plants to overcome the higher S_{lim} during water-limited periods resulting in increased C_i and photosynthetic rates compared to plants grown in aCO_2 . The multivariate pathway analysis shown in Figure 2.7 clearly supports the mechanism of how higher stomatal limitations during the dry periods can be overcome by eCO_2 thus resulting in a significant increase in the photosynthetic rates. The increased photosynthetic rates under eCO_2 suggest a potential for increased ecosystem C gain during dry periods. However, the phenology of different species would dictate if these responses could be translated to increased biomass accumulation.

Though eCO_2 overcomes S_{lim} thus increasing A_{net} during dry periods, this may not always be the case. The *Eucalyptus* woodland ecosystem in this study experienced frequent wet-dry periods resulting in moderate water stress (Fig. 2.1b, c), likely enhanced by water extraction by nearby trees. Findings from this study might best apply in systems such as savannas and grasslands where frequent droughts are common, rather than the long and more intense dry periods observed in semi-arid to arid regions. In the latter case, metabolic limitations that decrease photosynthetic capacity become more important than stomatal limitations and any increase in external CO_2 is unable to increase photosynthetic rates (Ghannoum *et al.*, 2003, Lawlor, 2002). For instance, eCO_2 was unable to increase photosynthetic rates in a desert shrub during severe drought because of reduced Rubisco content and low photosynthetic capacity (Naumburg *et al.*, 2003). Similarly, Gray *et al.* (2016) observed that during severe droughts, decreases in g_s and depression of C_i were greater in eCO_2 than aCO_2 . Consequently, there may be negative effects of severe restrictions on water availability

that are manifest by non-stomatal effects that can override the stomatal ones under severe plant water deficits.

2.5.4 Conclusions

In summary, under field conditions and over three years of CO₂ fumigation, I investigated two key mechanisms that might be responsible for eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement observed during periods of low water availability in C₃ herbaceous species of a grassy woodland. One of these, the ‘water-savings effect’, has been frequently assumed to be the main mechanism responsible for eCO₂ effect during dry conditions (Morgan *et al.*, 2004) and has been used in global models (Ahlström *et al.*, 2013, Zhu *et al.*, 2016). Though I observed maximum eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement during the dry periods, this enhancement was not mediated through the ‘water-savings effect’. Low water availability resulted in lower g_s , higher relative S_{lim} and thus a greater increase in C_i possible which led to a significant photosynthetic enhancement under eCO₂. The results demonstrate that interaction between water availability and eCO₂, controls g_s and hence the photosynthetic enhancement in the herbaceous understory of the dry grassy *Eucalyptus* woodland. Further, modelling photosynthetic enhancement should involve dynamic regulation of the set-point for gas exchange according to stomatal limitations across different times of year. Thus, eCO₂ has the potential to alter the structure and functioning of warm and periodically dry grassy woodland ecosystems through alleviation of S_{lim} and increase in photosynthetic CO₂ assimilation, but not via a ‘water-savings effect’ as is usually observed in temperate grasslands.

2.6 Supporting information

2.6.1 Supplementary tables

Table S 2.1 Results of the mixed-model split-plot ANOVA similar to Table 1.1, but for *M. stipoides* measured for 13 seasonal time points¹.

Shown are effects for net photosynthesis (A_{net}), temperature normalised maximum carboxylation ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$) and electron transport rates ($J_{\text{max-25}}$), N content on area basis (N_{area}), stomatal conductance (g_s), relative stomatal limitation (S_{lim}) and C_i difference as the difference between the transition C_i and operating C_i for *M. stipoides*. CO_2 refers to the CO_2 treatment and time refers to the seasonal time points during which measurements were carried out. P -values for the split-plot ANOVA are shown in bold for significant effects when the false discovery rate is controlled using the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure. df indicates the numerator degrees of freedom for the statistical tests.

Variables	Source of variation								
	CO_2			Time			$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Time}$		
	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value
A_{net}	1	14.53	0.019	12	27.01	<0.001	12	0.80	0.645
$V_{\text{cmax-25}}$	1	0.09	0.770	12	6.48	<0.001	12	0.89	0.560
$J_{\text{max-25}}$	1	0.25	0.640	12	6.99	<0.001	12	1.12	0.370
N_{area}	1	0.13	0.734	12	8.38	<0.001	12	2.27	0.031
g_s	1	4.47	0.101	12	20.04	<0.001	12	1.05	0.418
S_{lim}	1	0.71	0.450	12	11.12	<0.001	12	1.59	0.130
C_i difference	1	21.93	0.009	12	10.05	<0.001	12	1.33	0.358

¹All variables were transformed (square root or log transformation) to meet the normality assumptions for the mixed-model ANOVA.

Table S 2.2 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for *in situ* maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), N content on mass basis (N_{mass}), intercellular CO_2 concentration (C_i), ratio of intercellular to growth CO_2 concentration (C_i/C_a) and C_i transition as the CO_2 level for the transition between V_{cmax} -limited and J_{max} -limited A_{net} , across the three C_3 species measured for seven seasonal time points¹.

Results shown are across *M. stipoides*, *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*. CO_2 refers to the CO_2 treatment and time refers to the seasonal time points during which measurements were carried out. P -values for the split-plot ANOVA are shown in bold for significant effects when the false discovery rate is controlled using the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure. Three-way interactions were not statistically significant ($P > 0.02$) and hence not shown in the table. df indicates the numerator degrees of freedom for the statistical tests.

Variables	Source of variation																	
	CO_2			Time			Species			$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Time}$			Species \times CO_2			Species \times Time		
	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value
V_{cmax}	1	4.33	0.106	6	128.18	<0.001	2	151.18	<0.001	6	1.85	0.132	2	2.96	0.062	12	1.78	0.080
J_{max}	1	1.74	0.258	6	47.53	<0.001	2	149.52	<0.001	6	2.34	0.064	2	5.68	0.006	12	1.93	0.054
N_{mass}	1	1.30	0.317	6	11.81	<0.001	2	63.77	<0.001	6	1.70	0.163	2	0.21	0.808	12	2.80	0.005
C_i	1	330.42	<0.001	6	9.24	<0.001	2	4.78	0.012	6	1.26	0.311	2	0.28	0.754	12	3.47	0.001
C_i/C_a	1	0.56	0.494	6	10.08	<0.001	2	5.49	0.007	6	1.34	0.277	2	0.28	0.755	12	3.59	0.001
C_i transition	1	0.43	0.549	6	4.16	0.005	2	9.42	<0.001	6	1.43	0.243	2	1.92	0.156	12	1.38	0.204

¹All variables were transformed (square root or log transformation) to meet the normality assumptions for the mixed-model ANOVA.

Table S 2.3 Results of mixed-model split-plot ANOVA for *in situ* maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), N content on mass basis (N_{mass}), intercellular CO_2 concentration (C_i), ratio of intercellular to growth CO_2 concentration (C_i/C_a) and C_i transition as the CO_2 level for the transition between V_{cmax} -limited and J_{max} -limited A_{net} , for *M. stipoides* measured for 13 seasonal time points¹.

CO_2 refers to the CO_2 treatment and time refers to the seasonal time points during which measurements were carried out. *P*-values for the split plot ANOVA are shown in bold for significant effects when the false discovery rate is controlled using the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure. df indicates the numerator degrees of freedom for the statistical tests.

Variables	Source of variation								
	CO_2			Time			$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Time}$		
	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value
V_{cmax}	1	1.85	0.240	12	21.27	<0.001	12	0.34	0.974
J_{max}	1	0.63	0.470	12	18.18	<0.001	12	1.36	0.230
N_{mass}	1	0.05	0.829	12	9.03	<0.001	12	0.73	0.712
C_i	1	440.00	<0.001	12	4.67	<0.001	12	1.34	0.230
C_i/C_a	1	0.97	0.379	12	3.22	0.002	12	1.25	0.281
C_i transition	1	0.00	0.970	12	7.29	<0.001	12	0.72	0.730

¹All variables were transformed (square root or log transformation) to meet the normality assumptions for the mixed-model ANOVA.

Table S 2.4 Result of mixed-model split plot ANOVA for mean volumetric soil water content (V_{swc}) measured in the week prior to the initiation of gas exchange measurements for 13 seasonal time points.

CO_2 refers to the CO_2 treatment and time refers to the seasonal time points during which measurements were carried out. P -values for the split plot ANOVA are shown in bold when significant ($P < 0.05$). df indicates the numerator degrees of freedom for the statistical tests.

Variable	Source of variation								
	CO_2			Time			$CO_2 \times$ Time		
	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value
V_{swc}	1	0.16	0.706	12	87.01	<0.001	12	0.56	0.855

¹All variables were transformed (square root or log transformation) to meet the normality assumptions for the mixed-model ANOVA.

2.6.2 Supplementary figures

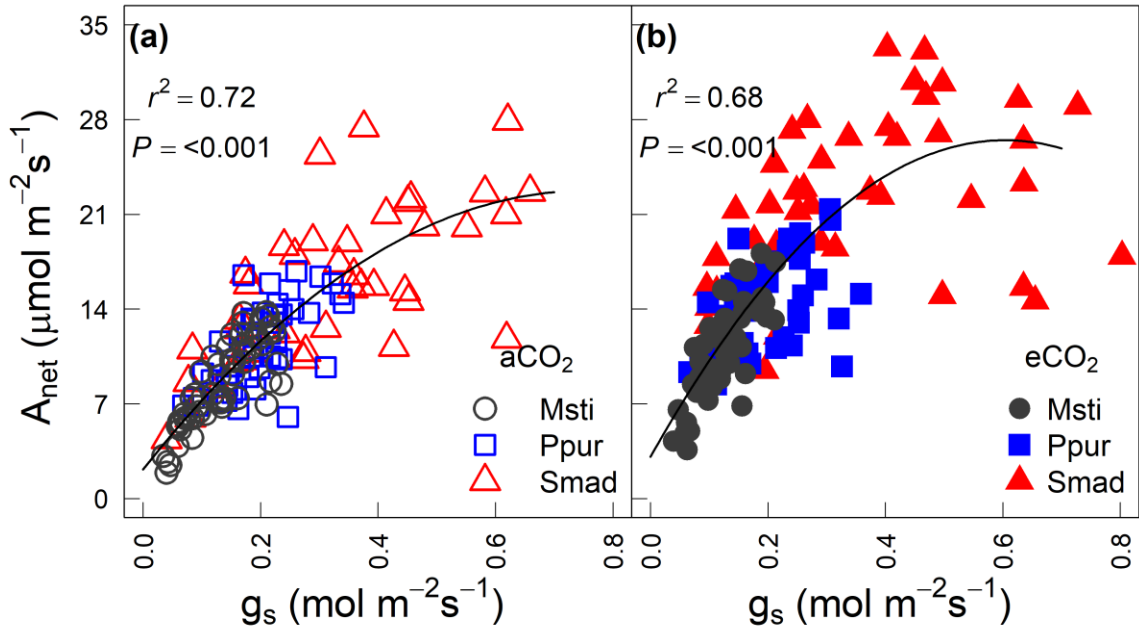


Fig. S 2.1 Relationship of A_{net} and g_s .

Growing season A_{net} as a function of growing season g_s under (a) aCO₂ (open symbols) and (b) eCO₂ (filled symbols) for the three species - *M. stipoides* (Msti, black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur, blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad, red triangles). Slopes of the regression lines between aCO₂ and eCO₂ are not significantly different ($P = 0.057$).

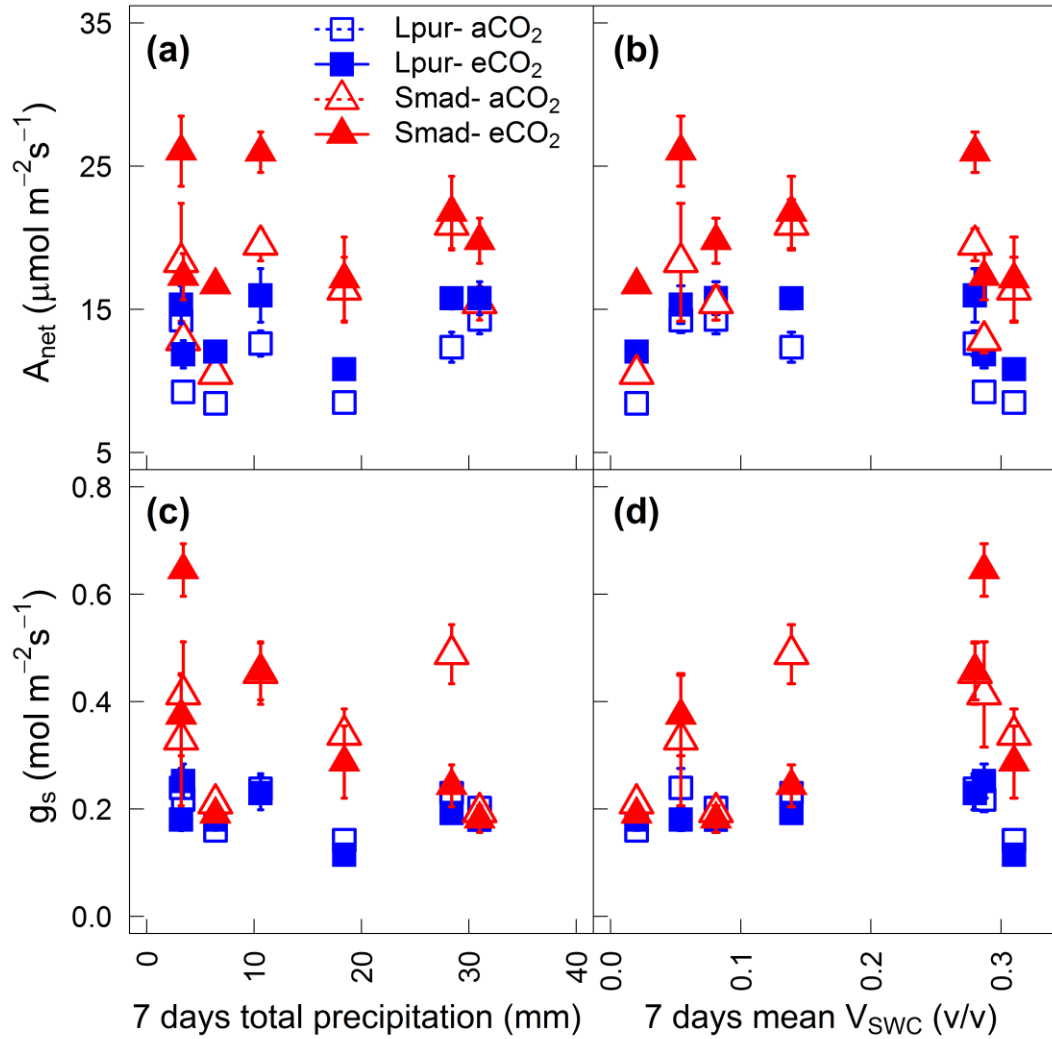


Fig. S 2.2 Relationship of A_{net} and g_s with weekly precipitation and V_{swc} .

(a,b) Mean growing season A_{net} and (c, d) mean growing season g_s as a function of (a, c) total precipitation and (b, d) mean daily V_{swc} over the week preceding A_{net} measurements for *L. purpurascens* (Lpur, blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad, red triangles). Open circles indicate a CO_2 and filled circles indicate e CO_2 .

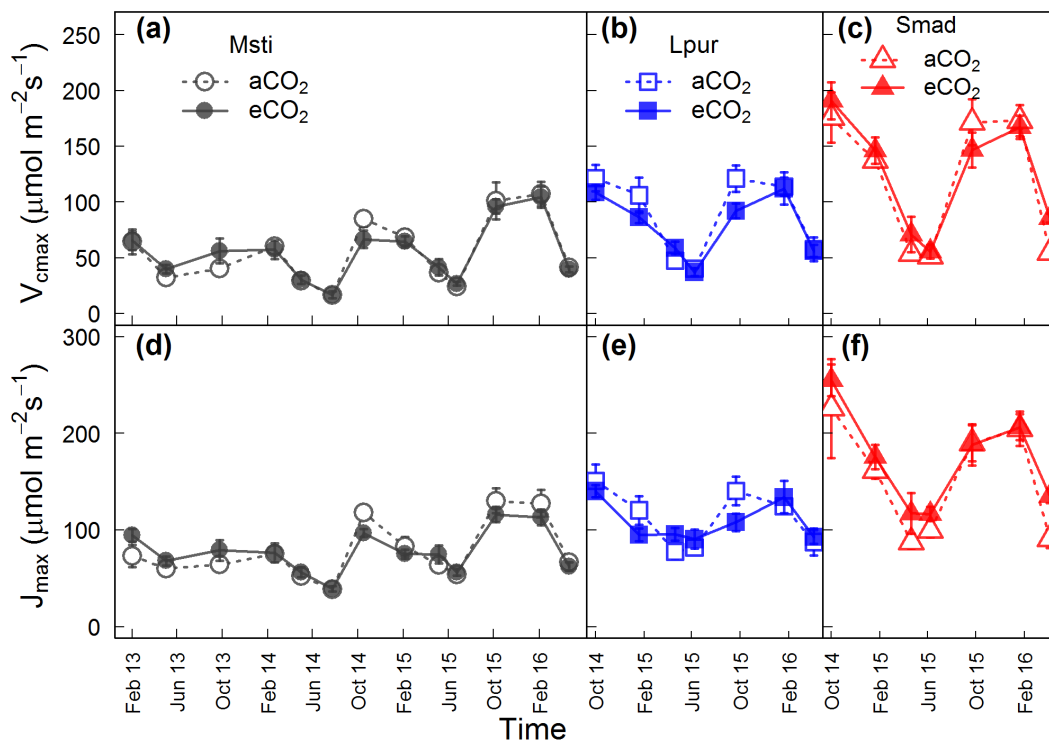


Fig. S 2.3 Time course for *in situ* maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) as a function of CO_2 treatments.

These parameters are shown for *M. stipoides* (Msti; a,d; black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur; b, e; blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad; c, f; red triangles).

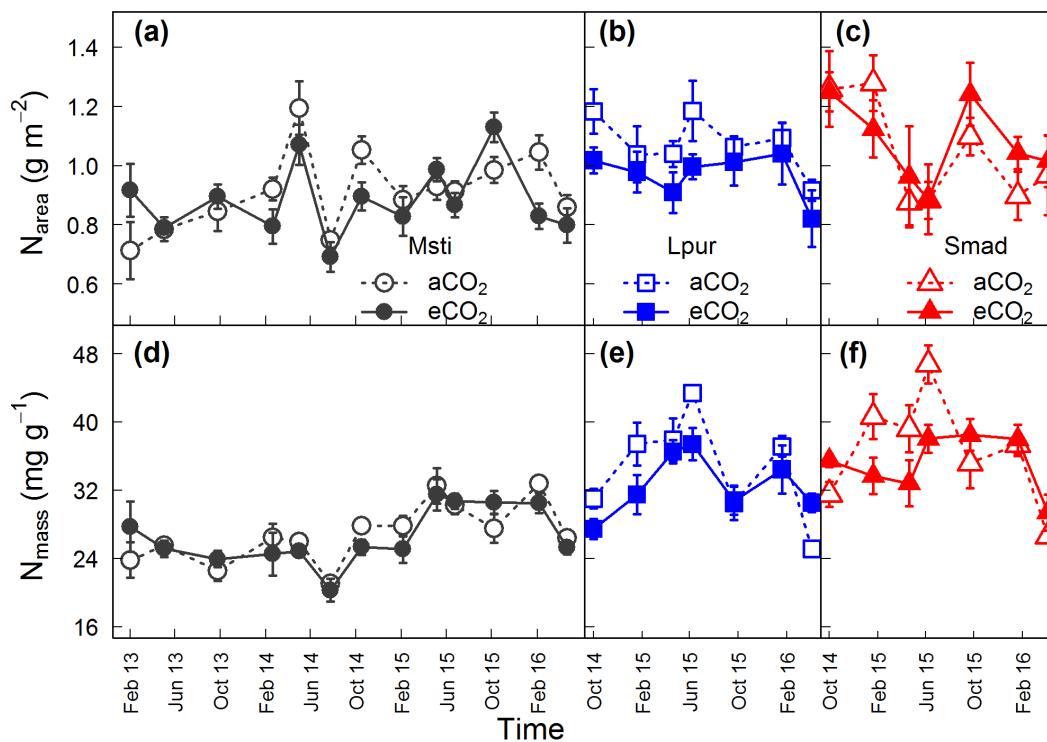


Fig. S 2.4 Time course for N content as a function of CO₂ treatments.

Mean growing season N content is expressed on (a, b and c) area basis (N_{area}), and (d, e and f) mass basis (N_{mass}). These parameters are shown for *M. stipoides* (Msti; a, d; black circles), *L.purpurascens* (Lpur; b, e; blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad; c, f; red triangles).

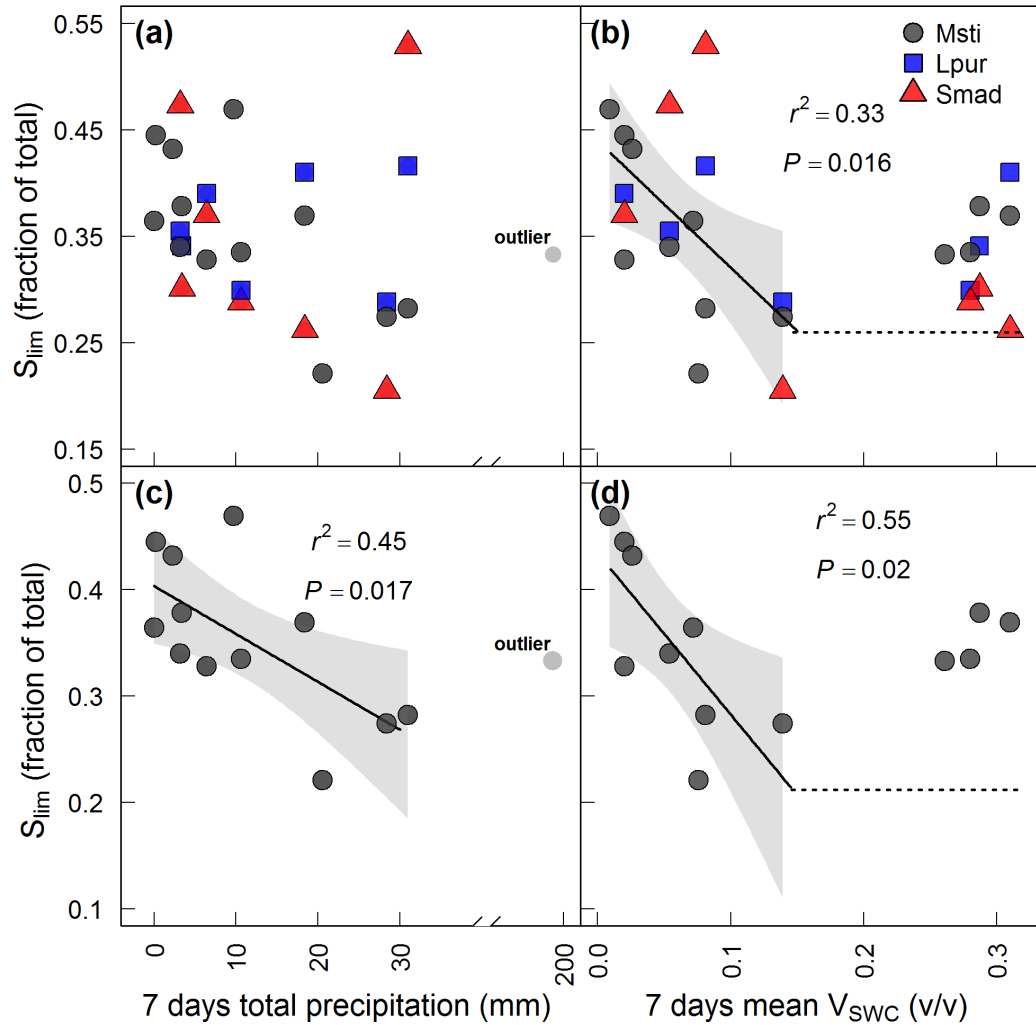


Fig. S 2.5 Relationship of S_{lim} with weekly precipitation and V_{SWC} .

Seasonal S_{lim} under aCO₂ as a function of (a, c) total precipitation and (b, d) mean daily V_{SWC} over the week preceding A_{net} measurements (a, b) for all three species - *M. stipoides* (Msti, black circles), *L. purpurascens* (Lpur, blue squares) and *S. madagascariensis* (Smad, red triangles) and (c, d) for *M. stipoides* only. Gray shaded portions indicate 95% confidence intervals for the mean values. In panels b and d, a broken stick function is shown, with fit to the linear part below the field capacity for this soil (0.18 v/v).

2.6.3 Description of the Structural Equation Modelling (SEM) approach and figures

I employed structural equation modelling in R as an approach for multivariate statistical modelling to investigate the networks of connections among components that contribute to leaf photosynthetic enhancement in elevated CO₂ in these herbaceous plants. The approach helped us examine complex cause-effect hypotheses about the mechanisms driving this photosynthetic enhancement. Photosynthetic enhancement in eCO₂ was examined both as an enhancement ratio and as an absolute difference, with very similar results between these two focal variables.

I specified a formal model that included two environmental inputs (any pair of precipitation, temperature and soil water content) and several physiological variables associated with the regulation of gas exchange of leaves. Following conventional understanding of how stomatal conductance and photosynthesis are regulated (Farquhar & Sharkey, 1982) and first-order theory of how elevated CO₂ would affect photosynthesis (Percy & Björkman, 1983), I formulated an initial path diagram hypothesizing the causal relationships among these variables (Fig. S2.6). Following the structural equation modelling approach (Grace, 2006, Lamb *et al.*, 2011) we set up a set of linear equations that establish an expected pattern to the variance-covariance matrix in the actual data. Using the Lavaan package in R (Rosseel, 2012), I applied the maximum likelihood approach to then minimize deviations between the observed data and the covariances appropriate for our initial model. Standardized path coefficients were expressed in terms of standard deviations so they could be compared. I then used the Chi-square test to determine whether the covariances implied by the model adequately fit the actual covariance structures of the data. I also formulated variations on the basic model in Fig. S2.6 to examine whether new variables (difference in C_i, or C_i/C_a ratio rather than S_{lim}) were more relevant than the ones chosen for the initial, basic model.

In the simple core model depicted in Fig. S2.6 and Fig. 2.7, precipitation provides soil moisture, which in turn affects g_s in ambient CO₂. There is a direct pathway from g_s to the absolute enhancement in A_{net} in eCO₂. Also there is an indirect pathway from g_s in ambient CO₂ to the absolute A_{net} enhancement in eCO₂, which is mediated by relative stomatal limitation in aCO₂, C_i/C_a ratio in aCO₂ or increase in C_i in eCO₂. Other variables could be included, but in doing so there is a loss of degrees of freedom and alternate models

involving V_{cmax} or leaf N_{area} yielded poor fits to the model, invalidating the overall model (Lamb *et al.*, 2011). Based on the core model in Fig. S2.6, I evaluated the hypothesis that temperature rather than precipitation would drive both available soil water as well as photosynthetic enhancement by $e\text{CO}_2$. In this case, all other relationships were identical to the core model. I also substituted the S_{lim} by C_i/C_a ratio in the theoretical model in Fig. S2.6 (Fig. S2.7). Other aspects of the model are same as given in Fig. S2.6. The arrow width is proportional to the size of the standardized coefficients. The overall Chi-square of 6.45 was not significant ($P = 0.26$), indicating an adequate fit to the data. Based on results in Fig. 2.7, S_{lim} provided stronger descriptors for the A_{net} enhancement than C_i/C_a ratio or the absolute increase in C_i .

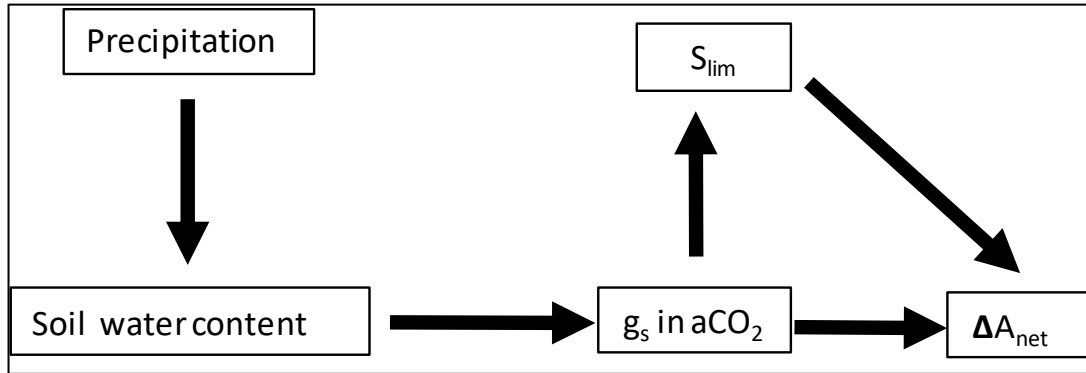


Fig. S 2.6 The basic structure of the core SEM model used to examine the multivariate regulation of photosynthetic enhancement by eCO₂ for herbaceous species at the EucFACE site.

The arrows denote a causal relationship where a change in the variable at the tail is a direct cause of changes in the variable at the head. The object ΔA_{net} denotes the absolute enhancement of A_{net} by eCO₂. Model results were very similar when A_{net} enhancement ratio for eCO₂ was used instead.

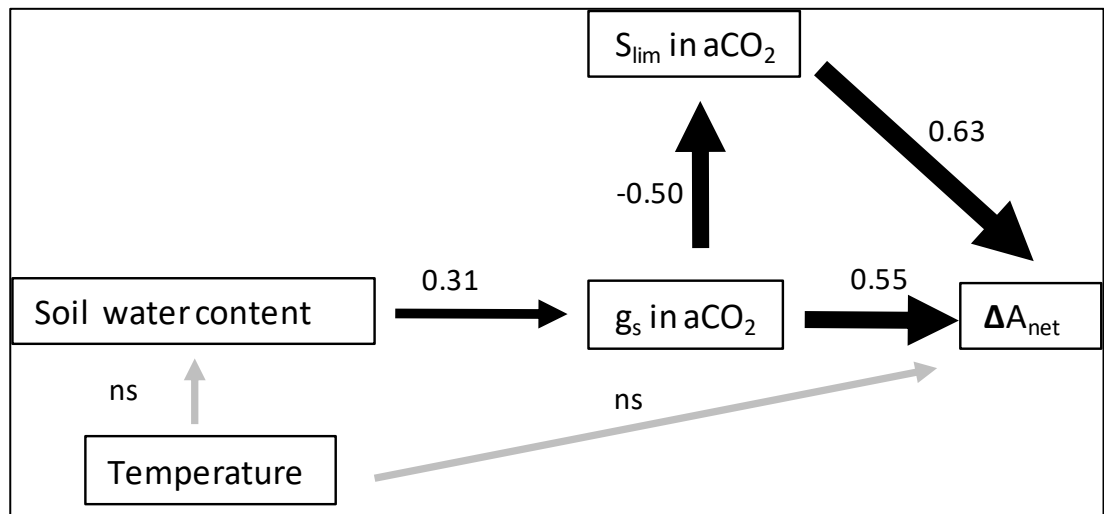


Fig. S 2.7 An alternative fitted SEM model based on the original theoretical one in Fig. S 2.6, but including the measurement temperature instead of precipitation.

Other aspects of the model are same as given in Fig. S2.6. Temperature was not significant in this model. The overall Chi-square of 6.2 was not significant ($P = 0.18$), indicating an adequate fit to the data.

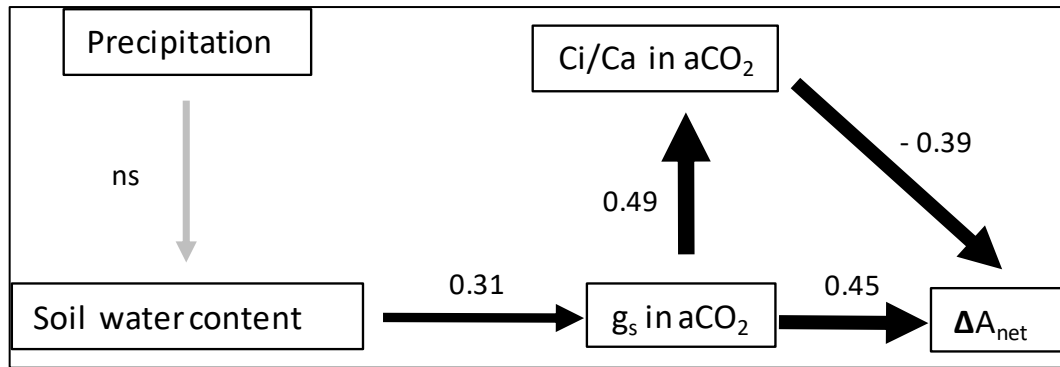


Fig. S 2.8 Another alternative SEM model similar to the theoretical model in Fig. S2.6, but replacing S_{lim} with C_i/C_a ratio.

The results are substantially similar to those in Fig. 2.7, except that there is a negative rather than positive interaction between C_i/C_a ratio and ΔA_{net} .

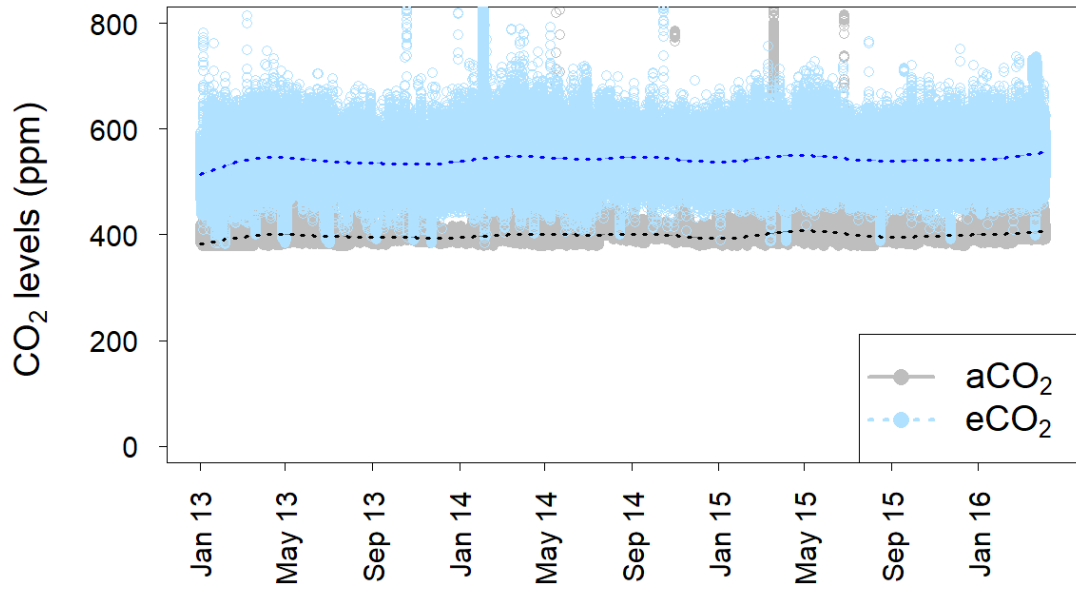


Fig. S 2.9 Atmospheric [CO₂] measured at EucFACE at 21 m above-ground for aCO₂ (gray symbols) and eCO₂ (blue symbols) plots during the first three years of CO₂ fertilisation. Data are 1-min means for [CO₂]. Smoothed regressions with 95% confidence intervals (gray areas) are shown for aCO₂ (black dashed line) and eCO₂ (blue dashed line).

2.6.4 Supplementary methods

Temperature response measurements and model fitting

We carried out temperature response measurements (data not shown) on the dominant *M. stipoides* following a procedure modified from Crous *et al.* (2013). *M. stipoides* seeds, collected from the Cumberland plain woodland, were germinated and raised in the glasshouse in 50L pots under controlled conditions (25°C and 60% relative humidity). Two month old *M. stipoides* plants were then transferred to growth cabinet for temperature response measurements. $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curves were measured at five specified leaf temperatures (in the sequence 18, 22, 28, 32 and 35°C) starting with the lowest temperature (18 °C) and then repeated four times on the same set of leaves each time increasing the temperature. During temperature response measurements, the entire *M. stipoides* plants were exposed to similar air temperatures in the growth cabinets. At least four replicate measurements of the entire $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curve per temperature were made. The temperature response of maximum carboxylation rates, (V_{cmax} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), derived by using the biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.* (1980), was fit using the modified form of an Arrhenius function (peaked function; see Harley *et al.*, 1992 and Medlyn *et al.*, 2002). The resulting kinetic constants were further used to obtain temperature-normalised V_{cmax} ($V_{\text{cmax-25}}$).

N content

Leaf %N content, shown in Fig. S2.4, was then determined by using the CHNS elemental analyser (Elementar Vario Micro CHNS analyser, Hanau, Germany). Leaf N content was expressed on area (N_{area} , g m^{-2}) and mass basis (N_{mass} , mg g^{-1}).



Image 2.1 Photosynthetic gas exchange measurements, using a LiCOR-6400 at the EucFACE.

Measurements were carried out seasonally on the understory herbaceous species by the author using a set of Li-6400 photosynthesis systems. Photo courtesy: Dr Balasaheb V. Sonawane.

Chapter 3 : Photosynthetic acclimation and productivity responses of understory herbaceous species from a resource-limited *Eucalyptus* woodland

3.1 Abstract

Despite their importance for forest biodiversity and functioning, only few studies have addressed the elevated CO₂ (eCO₂) effects on photosynthesis and biomass growth of the understory species. Here, I investigated the photosynthetic and biomass responses to eCO₂ for the herbaceous understory species growing naturally in a warm, water-limited *Eucalyptus* woodland during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at the *Eucalyptus* Free-Air CO₂ Enrichment Experiment (EucFACE). Photosynthetic responses to eCO₂ were measured during the spring, summer and autumn seasons each year in a dominant C₃ forb and a dominant C₃ grass. Above-ground biomass in ambient and eCO₂ was measured during the summer season of each year for all understory forbs and grasses.

Across the species and seasons, there was a significant enhancement in photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) under eCO₂ ($\approx 23\%$). There was also evidence of down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂. This may have resulted in the lack of A_{net} stimulation and also lack of proportional biomass stimulation under eCO₂ that was observed during the peak seasons. In the C₃ forb, eCO₂ led to a decrease in leaf carboxylation (V_{cmax} ; -30%) and electron transport capacities (J_{max} ; -20%) during the spring seasons. In the C₃ grass, eCO₂ led to a decrease in leaf carboxylation (V_{cmax} ; -35%) and electron transport capacities (J_{max} ; -24%), but only during one spring season out of two. For the remaining measurement seasons, photosynthetic capacity and A_{net} stimulation were maintained under eCO₂ in both the species. A decrease in photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ could be related to a protein specific down-regulation of the Rubisco enzyme. Elevated CO₂ did not significantly ($P > 0.10$) affect live above-ground forb and grass biomass, nor did it affect the total above-ground biomass (live plus senescent) measured during the summer seasons. Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation during the spring, and lack of biomass stimulation in the understory species during the following summer under eCO₂ together indicate a limited capacity of these woodland species to respond to eCO₂.

3.2 Introduction

For over two decades, long-term free-air CO₂ enrichment experiments have been conducted in different terrestrial ecosystem types (Leakey *et al.*, 2012) with a focus on the overstory tree components from forest ecosystems (Körner *et al.*, 2005, McCarthy *et al.*, 2010, Norby & Zak, 2011) and the herbaceous species from grasslands (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Hovendan *et al.*, 2014, Polley *et al.*, 2012). Very few studies on vegetation responses to elevated CO₂ (eCO₂) focus on the understory plants, and those that have been done involve tree seedlings and shrubs (Awmack *et al.*, 2007, Kim *et al.*, 2015, Naumburg & Ellsworth, 2000, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007), resulting in less knowledge about the understory herbaceous species responses to eCO₂. Understory herbaceous vegetation represents an important component of the overall diversity and functioning and their ability to respond to eCO₂ can affect ecosystem processes such as tree seedling growth and regeneration, nutrient cycling and fire regimes (Bond & Midgley, 2012, Nilsson & Wardle, 2005, Valladares *et al.*, 2016). The understory herbaceous species may be more responsive to eCO₂ in terms of increase in photosynthesis and productivity, than those growing in open areas like grasslands, because plants growing in shaded environments may be more C-limited than those growing in open habitats (Hättenschwiler & Körner, 2000, Würth *et al.*, 1998). However, overstory dynamics (Kim *et al.*, 2015) and water and nutrient availability (Belote *et al.*, 2004, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007) may alter this expectation.

A well-documented short-term response to increase in atmospheric CO₂ is the stimulation of photosynthetic rates in the C₃ species (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007). However, with long-term exposure to eCO₂, there may be departures from these short-term responses (Drake *et al.*, 1997), attributable to down-regulation of the biochemistry of photosynthesis. Downregulation is frequently manifested as either declines in the Rubisco carboxylation (V_{cmax}) or maximal electron transport rate (J_{max} ; Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Stitt & Krapp, 1999), or both. Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation has been reported in field experiments on the herbaceous C₃ species (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Inauen *et al.*, 2012). These reductions have been associated to insufficient sink capacity under nutrient limitations (Stitt & Krapp, 1999), selective down-regulation of the Rubisco enzyme (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Aranjuelo

et al., 2011, Long *et al.*, 2004), dilution of leaf N by carbohydrates (Deng *et al.*, 2015, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004), differences in plant nutrient foraging capacities (Crous *et al.*, 2010) and decreases in plant N acquisition (Feng *et al.*, 2015). The ability of plants to maintain photosynthetic and biomass enhancement under eCO₂ largely depends on their ability to maintain photosynthetic capacities (Long *et al.*, 2004). If the photosynthetic capacity of plants is down-regulated under eCO₂, the ecosystem may become less responsive to eCO₂ and consequently sequester less C than it would without down-regulation (Luo *et al.*, 2003). Hence, understanding the mechanisms and extent of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ in plants as well the factors affecting this response, is essential for predicting their capacity to sequester extra C in future (Bagley *et al.*, 2015, Piao *et al.*, 2008), no less important for the understory plants than the trees and the grassland species.

Seasonal variation in biotic and environmental factors like source-sink balance, species phenology, temperature, light, water and nutrient availability have all been found to affect the magnitude of photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ (Fatichi *et al.*, 2014, Onoda *et al.*, 2005, Sefcik *et al.*, 2006). Among these, altered source-sink balance due to seasonal variation in above and below ground growth of the evergreen species has been suggested as an important reason for seasonal photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ (Burnett *et al.*, 2016, Leakey *et al.*, 2009, Lewis *et al.*, 1996). A source refers to the strong net C uptake from the external environment for carbohydrate production, whereas a sink is defined as the capacity to utilize or deplete carbohydrates for growth or storage (White *et al.*, 2015). Insufficient sink capacity for additional carbohydrates produced in leaves under eCO₂ may cause carbohydrate accumulation and hence photosynthetic acclimation especially in the seasons with low temperature and low growth activity, like autumn (Fatichi *et al.*, 2014, Lewis *et al.*, 1996). Whereas, increased temperature and growth activity during the peak seasons like spring and summer, increasing possible 'sinks' for carbohydrates, may increase the response of net photosynthesis to eCO₂ (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003b, Lewis *et al.*, 1996). Phenological shifts under eCO₂ such as early spring growth, delay or acceleration of leaf senescence (Cleland *et al.*, 2006, Onoda *et al.*, 2005, Taylor *et al.*, 2008, Zhu *et al.*, 2012) and changes in leaf ontogeny (Miller *et al.*, 1997) can also cause seasonal variation in photosynthetic capacity acclimation. For example, photosynthesis during the leaf ontogeny is characterised by phase of increasing rates to maximum

followed by phase of decreasing rates (Miller *et al.*, 1997). Elevated CO₂-induced increase in the photosynthetic rates may alter the timing of these photosynthetic stages of leaf ontogeny, possibly to an earlier onset, thus causing seasonal variation in photosynthetic acclimation (Miller *et al.*, 1997). Seasonal variation in light availability may also affect the photosynthetic capacity responses to eCO₂, particularly in the understory species (Naumburg & Ellsworth, 2000, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007). For instance, light availability in the understory is related to the dynamics of over story leaf area index (Katahata *et al.*, 2007), with reductions in the irradiance that can occur with seasonal leaf production of the overstory that progresses from spring to summer and autumn. The understory species may respond to this seasonal variation in light availability by morphological and biochemical adjustments (Hättenschwiler, 2001), thus affecting their responses to eCO₂ (Kim *et al.*, 2015). Knowledge about the seasonal variations in photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ is important for accurate modelling of annual ecosystem carbon gain, particularly for the evergreen species growing in ecosystems where carbon uptake can occur throughout the year (Bagley *et al.*, 2015, Piao *et al.*, 2008).

Here, I investigated the seasonal effects of eCO₂ on the photosynthetic acclimation of two dominant native herbaceous evergreen species growing naturally in the understory of a sub-tropical *Eucalyptus* woodland at the *Eucalyptus* Free Air CO₂ Enrichment Experiment (EucFACE). These two species, *Microlaena stipoides* Labill. (a C₃ grass) and *Lobelia purpurascens* R.Br. (a C₃ forb) were the two most-dominant herbaceous species in the understory of the site. In Chapter 2 of the current study, I investigated the relationship between seasonal water-availability and eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement for three C₃ herbaceous species (Pathare *et al.*, 2017). The proportional eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement of these species was strongest during periods of low soil water content, particularly a result of eCO₂-induced boost in intercellular CO₂ concentration during dry-soil periods. However, a lack of photosynthetic stimulation by eCO₂ during wet periods in this earlier work (Pathare *et al.*, 2017) suggested a seasonal regulation of photosynthetic capacity in these species. Based on this, in the current study I sought to determine if there is evidence of down-regulation in different herbaceous plant groups and reveal its mechanism. I hypothesized that (H1) there would be larger down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ during the autumn than spring and

summer. If the hypothesis was accepted, I sought to understand if growth sink capacity was related to this phenomenon.

In addition to the seasonal photosynthetic acclimation responses, I also assessed the above-ground biomass responses of total understory grasses and forbs to eCO₂. Though eCO₂ mostly leads to increase in photosynthetic rates, this may not always result in biomass enhancement because of limited ability of plant to utilize the extra carbohydrate due to soil nutrient limitations (Kirschbaum, 2011). Few previous studies addressing the effects of eCO₂ on the biomass of understory herbaceous and woody species report inconsistent responses ranging from increased biomass (Souza *et al.*, 2010) to a lack of eCO₂-induced biomass enhancement (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015) and even a decrease in biomass under eCO₂ (Awmack *et al.*, 2007, Dawes *et al.*, 2015). This variation in understory biomass responses to eCO₂ has been hypothesized to be a result of variation in soil nutrient availability, water availability, responses of overstory canopies and growth conditions (Belote *et al.*, 2004, Kim *et al.*, 2015, Kubiske *et al.*, 2002). Based on kinetic characteristics of the Rubisco enzyme (Long, 1991), the C₃ species growing in the warmer ecosystems with higher mean annual temperatures may have a greater potential to respond positively to eCO₂ for photosynthesis and biomass, than plants growing in the cold temperate ecosystems (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Friend, 2010, Hickler *et al.*, 2008). Based on this, I hypothesized (H2) that, above-ground biomass of the understory herbaceous species will be higher under eCO₂ compared to ambient CO₂.

3.3 Material and methods

3.3.1 *Experimental site description and species under study*

We conducted this experiment on the dominant C₃ herbaceous understory species in the second and third year of the *Eucalyptus* Free-Air CO₂ Enrichment (EucFACE) experiment (Image 1.1). A detailed description of EucFACE site has been given in Chapter 2 (section 2.3.1). The total P concentration in the soil done by Kjeldahl digest and ICP analysis was $58.8 \pm 7.9 \text{ mg kg}^{-1}$ at 0-15 cm soil depth (Crous *et al.*, 2015), whereas, total soil N content was 677 mg kg^{-1} (Hasegawa *et al.*, 2015).

The vegetation consists of a naturally growing open woodland (overstory leaf area index < 2, Duursma *et al.*, 2016), with a substantial understory cover dominated by an evergreen native C₃ grass, *Microlaena stipoides* Labill. ($\approx 70\%$ of total understory biomass) (Tozer, 2003). Herbaceous C₃ forbs form the second most abundant functional group in the understory ($\approx 20\%$ of total understory biomass) and is dominated by an evergreen native shallow-rooted creeping C₃ forb, *Lobelia purpurascens* R.Br. In the current study, I focused on measuring the two dominant species: *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens*, as representative of two major functional groups-C₃ grass and C₃ forb respectively (see Image 1.2 and section 1.8 of Chapter 1 for species details). Of the total understory ground cover, these two species contributed 31% and 14% of the plant cover, respectively (Hasegawa, 2015). These two species are denoted in the figures by the genus initial and the first three letters of the species name.

3.3.2 *Field measurements*

Leaf level gas exchange measurements were performed on *L. purpurascens* as the dominant C₃ forb and *M. stipoides* as the dominant C₃ grass. Measurements were conducted during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation, with three time points per year and each time point representing a season of the year (spring, summer and autumn). Also, measurements were conducted during the latter half of each season, that is, October end (spring), first week of February (summer) and April end (autumn), to ensure measurements on leaves developed and acclimated to the respective growth conditions. A

set of portable infrared photosynthesis systems (Li-COR 6400XT; Li-COR Inc., Lincoln, NE, USA) with six cm² chambers were used for gas exchange measurements. In order to assess instantaneous and long-term effects of eCO₂ on the photosynthetic capacities of the two dominant species, photosynthetic CO₂ response curves (A_{net}-C_i curves) were measured as indicated in Chapter 2 (Pathare *et al.*, 2017).. Net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}), stomatal conductance (g_s) and intercellular [CO₂] (C_i) were measured at the mean growth CO₂ concentration for each treatment (≈ 400 μmol mol⁻¹ for aCO₂ and ≈ 550 μmol mol⁻¹ for eCO₂). T_{leaf} during the gas exchange measurement was controlled at the prevailing mean daily maximum air temperatures (T_{air}; °C) during each measurement season (22 °C for autumn, 27 °C for spring and 29 °C for summer seasons) (Chapter 2, Fig. 2.1a). Measurements were conducted during sunny mid-days (09:30-14:30) on young, fully expanded leaves exposed to sunlight. At least two measurements per CO₂ plot per species were undertaken at every season. During the A_{net}-C_i measurements, [CO₂] in the cuvette was controlled as reference. A_{net}-C_i curves were fit using the biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.* (1980), in order to obtain temperature normalized rates of maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax-25}; μmol m⁻² s⁻¹) and electron transport (J_{max-25}; μmol m⁻² s⁻¹) (see Chapter 2 for detailed procedure). While deriving the values for V_{cmax-25} and J_{max-25}, C_i transition point was set at 300, since it reduced the standard error of fit by about four-fold. Also, the C_i transition point did not differ between ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments. From V_{cmax-25} and corresponding leaf N content, I calculated the apparent fraction of N allocated to the active state Rubisco enzyme (f_{N-Rubisco}), assuming a composition of 16.67% N, eight active sites and a k_{cat} of 3.3 for the enzyme (Evans, 1989).

After each A_{net}-C_i response curve, leaves were marked to assess the correct leaf area in the chamber, collected in self-sealing polythene bags, labelled and immediately placed on ice until further analyses. In the laboratory, the projected leaf area of the marked leaves in Li-COR 6400XT chamber was determined (Win Rhizo software, Regent Instruments Inc., Québec City, Canada) and gas exchange measurements were recalculated accordingly. Leaf samples were then freeze dried for two days at -50 °C and were weighed to obtain leaf mass per area (LMA; g m⁻²). Further, the dried leaf samples were finely ground and then processed for C and N content analyses using CHNS elemental analyzer (Elementar Vario Micro CHNS analyser, Hanau, Germany). Leaf nitrogen content was expressed on

both area (N_{area} ; g m^{-2}) and mass basis (N_{mass} ; mg g^{-1}). Leaf P content of the dried leaf samples was determined using an X-ray fluorescence spectrometer which works on the principle of excitation of inner orbital electrons by an X-ray radiation source (Reidinger *et al.*, 2012). Dried plant material was finely ground, pressed into pellets and analysed by exposing the pellets to X-rays for 30s. Certified reference materials from different plant species were used for calibration. Leaf P content was expressed on area basis as P_{area} (g m^{-2}) and mass basis as P_{mass} (mg g^{-1}). Leaf N to P ratio (N: P) was derived as N_{mass} divided by P_{mass} .

3.3.3 Above-ground biomass measurements

To determine the peak standing above-ground biomass of the understory herbaceous species present at the EucFACE facility (Image 3.1), harvesting was carried out for two consecutive years (2015 and 2016) during the month of February which indicates the end of peak growing season (including spring and summer growth). These two years represent the second and third year of CO_2 enrichment at EucFACE. I used a clip-strip method of biomass harvest as has been applied previously at the BioCON experiment (Reich *et al.*, 2001). In particular, four narrow strips, each having a size of 1m x 10 cm, were placed in each of the CO_2 plots at least 2 m from the vertical pipes for FACE, while avoiding the understory shrubs (Image 3.1). The understory herbaceous species were clipped approximately one cm above soil level and sorted into total live grass biomass (comprising of C_3 and C_4 grasses), total live forb biomass and senesced biomass. The senesced biomass was the dead biomass still attached to the plants and did not consist of decomposing material and twigs and dead leaves of overstory trees. Biomass samples were oven dried for two days at 60 °C, weighed to determine the dry biomass and was expressed on g m^{-2} basis. The sampling method was robust as four clip-strips were harvested per CO_2 plot. However, the EucFACE is located in a natural, undisturbed ecosystem. As a result, the clip-strips may differ from each other in terms of number and type of species present. Thus, the biomass was separated into total grasses and total forbs.

3.3.4 Statistical analysis

Statistical analyses were performed using the R software (v3.2.2, R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria). The EucFACE facility consists of three ambient and three elevated CO₂ rings or plots and hence the true number of replicates was three for each of the two levels of CO₂ treatment. For both the C₃ species, *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides*, gas exchange measurements were carried out in at least two locations in each of the six plots across six measurement seasons (two springs, two summer and two autumn time points) during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at the EucFACE facility. Further, live above-ground biomass, for total grasses and total forbs, was measured in four locations in each of the six plots for two peak seasons, that is, summer 2015 and summer 2016. Hence, three mixed level split-plot ANOVA were performed with CO₂ treatment as a whole-plot factor and season or year as a split-plot factor. The first ANOVA compared the seasonal variation in physiological and biochemical parameters (A_{net} , C_i/C_a , N content, V_{cmax} , J_{max} , $f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$ and LMA) for the two C₃ species across three measurement seasons and between CO₂ treatments. The second ANOVA was analysis of CO₂ treatment, year and functional type (grasses versus forbs) effects on the live above-ground biomass. The third ANOVA was analysis of CO₂ treatment effects on the total above-ground biomass (total live plus senescent), across two measurement years. Appropriate tests were conducted to check the data for normality and equal variances and wherever necessary, log or square root transformations were used to improve the homoscedasticity of data (Zar, 2007). Linear mixed effects models were fitted using the ‘lme’ function within the ‘nlme’ package (Pinheiro *et al.*, 2016). Student’s *t*-test was used for the effect of CO₂ treatment within seasons wherein $P < 0.05$ was considered as statistically significant. For all the physiological and biochemical parameters measured, I used the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure, for the number of ANOVA tests performed, to control the false discovery rate (Benjamini & Hochberg, 1995). Based on this procedure, values of $P < 0.03$ were identified as critical. However, to avoid false negatives and also due to the low number of true replicates ($n = 3$) for CO₂ treatment, values of $P < 0.1$ were considered as marginally significant. We expressed the relative effect of eCO₂ on the measured variables as a percent change calculated as: Effect size = [(mean at eCO₂ - mean at aCO₂) / (mean at aCO₂)] x 100.

Table 3.1 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA for light saturated net photosynthetic rates (A_{net}), light saturated photosynthetic rates measured at common $[CO_2]$ (A_{net-Ca}), temperature normalized maximum carboxylation ($V_{cmax-25}$) and electron transport rates (J_{max-25}), N content on area (N_{area}) and mass basis (N_{mass}), apparent fraction of N allocated to Rubisco ($f_{N-Rubisco}$) P content on area (P_{area}) and mass basis (P_{mass}), N to P ratio (N: P ratio) and leaf mass per area (LMA).

Numerator and denominator degrees of freedom are indicated in parentheses. CO_2 refers to ambient and elevated CO_2 treatment, season refers to spring, summer and autumn and species refers to C_3 grass (*M. stipoides*) and C_3 forb (*L. purpurascens*). Based on the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure, critical P -values were identified to be 0.03. However, due to the low number of true replicates for CO_2 treatment ($n=3$), P -values < 0.1 are considered as marginally significant.

Variables	Source of variation													
	CO_2 (1, 4)		Season (2, 8)		Species (1, 12)		$CO_2 \times$ Season (2, 8)		$CO_2 \times$ Species (1, 12)		Season \times Species (2, 12)		$CO_2 \times$ Season \times Species (2, 12)	
	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value
A_{net}	11.330	0.028	31.440	<0.001	21.700	0.001	0.580	0.578	0.083	0.777	2.520	0.122	0.890	0.433
A_{net-Ca}	1.730	0.258	3.770	<0.001	9.530	0.009	2.207	0.172	0.140	0.714	1.161	0.346	0.979	0.403
$V_{cmax-25}$	1.569	0.278	12.050	0.004	36.726	<0.001	6.148	0.024	0.809	0.386	0.751	0.492	2.591	0.116
J_{max-25}	0.574	0.491	13.820	0.003	33.570	<0.001	4.875	0.041	0.000	0.996	0.326	0.728	0.837	0.456
N_{area}	1.460	0.290	8.650	0.010	9.670	0.009	0.207	0.817	1.020	0.333	1.160	0.346	1.470	0.268
N_{mass}	1.060	0.361	4.160	0.057	27.350	<0.001	2.430	0.149	0.064	0.804	1.758	0.214	1.153	0.348
$f_{N-Rubisco}$	0.037	0.857	2.770	0.121	24.930	<0.001	8.220	0.011	0.000	0.986	1.836	0.201	1.210	0.332
P_{area}	0.804	0.420	4.210	0.056	50.050	<0.001	0.130	0.878	0.298	0.594	2.174	0.156	0.140	0.870
P_{mass}	0.245	0.646	2.470	0.145	50.230	<0.001	0.164	0.851	0.030	0.865	0.360	0.705	0.334	0.722
N: P ratio	0.127	0.740	1.530	0.272	48.890	<0.001	0.008	0.991	1.150	0.304	3.790	0.053	0.053	0.948
LMA	2.116	0.224	25.420	<0.001	2.659	0.129	1.257	0.335	0.434	0.522	0.760	0.491	3.480	0.064

Table 3.2 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA for live above-ground biomass of understory species with CO₂ treatment, year and functional type (grasses versus forbs) as main effects.

df column shows numerator and denominator degrees of freedom. CO₂ refers to ambient and elevated CO₂ treatment and year refers to the second and third year of CO₂ fertilization at the EucFACE. Statistically significant *P*- values are highlighted in bold.

Source of variation	df	<i>F</i> -value	<i>P</i> -value
CO ₂	1, 4	0.033	0.86
Year	1, 4	0.133	0.73
Functional type	1, 8	106	<0.001
CO ₂ x Year	1, 4	0.07	0.805
CO ₂ x Functional type	1, 8	1.62	0.24
Year x Functional type	1, 8	14.13	0.0056
CO ₂ x Year x Functional type	1, 8	0.087	0.776

3.4 Results

3.4.1 Effects of CO₂ treatment and season on photosynthetic rates

With a +150 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ enrichment in the CO₂ concentration, there was a significant increase in light saturated net photosynthetic rates across the species and six seasons during the second and third year of CO₂ enrichment at EucFACE ($P = 0.028$, Table 1). On average, A_{net} increased by $\approx 22\%$ and $\approx 24\%$ under eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides* respectively (Fig. 3.1a). The split-plot ANOVA did not detect a significant CO₂ x season interaction effect on A_{net} across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, the magnitude of eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement varied among the six measurement seasons for the two species (Fig. 3.1a). In particular, there was no significant increase in A_{net} under eCO₂ during the two spring time points (spring 2014 and spring 2015) in *L. purpurascens* and one spring (spring 2014) and one summer (summer 2015) time point in *M. stipoides* (t -test, $P > 0.1$, Fig. 3.1a). For the remaining seasons, A_{net} increased significantly under eCO₂ in both the species (t -test, $P < 0.05$, Fig. 3.1a).

Measurement season had a highly significant effect on the net photosynthetic rates across the species ($P < 0.01$, Table 3.1). Average A_{net} across the CO₂ treatments and species was higher in the spring and summer ($13.34 \pm 0.48 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) and lower in the autumn seasons ($9.45 \pm 0.57 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$). This reduction in A_{net} during the autumn probably reflects the effects of low temperature on photosynthesis. Species also differed significantly in terms of A_{net} values across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P = 0.001$, Table 3.1), with *L. purpurascens* having significantly higher photosynthetic rates ($12.6 \pm 0.71 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) compared to *M. stipoides* ($10.5 \pm 0.6 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$). There were no significant CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects on A_{net} ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1).

Overall, the lack of statistically significant increase in A_{net} under eCO₂ during the two peak growing seasons of spring for *L. purpurascens* and one spring and one summer season for *M. stipoides*, was an indicative of downward adjustment in photosynthetic characteristics under eCO₂. This lack of photosynthetic enhancement during the peak seasons could be attributed to treatment differences associated with eCO₂-induced

stomatal closure. However, results from Chapter 2 (Pathare *et al.*, 2017), indicate no significant CO₂ treatment effect on stomatal conductance and ratio of intercellular CO₂ concentration to CO₂ outside the leaf for both *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides*. Thus, a lack of eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement must instead be related to the biochemistry of photosynthesis. In the following sections, I examined the parameters associated with leaf photosynthetic capacity for evidence of down-regulation.

3.4.2 Effects of CO₂ treatment and season on biochemical capacity

Light saturated photosynthetic rates measured at a common CO₂ concentration of 400 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$) can be compared between CO₂ treatments to test for changes in photosynthetic capacity in response to growth in different CO₂ treatments (Fig. 3.1b), assuming the stomatal conductance is not responsive to C_a level (see Pathare *et al.*, 2017 and Chapter 2). The ANOVA indicated no significant CO₂ or CO₂ x season effect on $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, the percent change in $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ due to long-term CO₂ treatment varied among the seasons for the two species (Fig. 3.1b). In particular, $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ decreased significantly during spring 2014 in *L. purpurascens* (*t-test*, $P < 0.05$) and *M. stipoides* (*t-test*, $P < 0.05$). Furthermore, there was a marginally significant trend towards lower $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ under eCO₂ during spring 2015 for *L. purpurascens* (*t-test*, $P < 0.1$). Seasons were different for $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ across the CO₂ treatments and species ($P < 0.01$, Table 3.1), with mean values being significantly higher in spring and summer ($12.54 \pm 0.42 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) compared to autumn seasons ($9.01 \pm 0.23 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$). Species also differed significantly in terms of $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ values across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P = 0.009$, Table 3.1). There were no significant CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects on $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1).

In addition to $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$, parameters like $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ are important indicators of changes in photosynthetic capacity of plants in response to growth at eCO₂. There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ across the seasons and species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, there was a significant CO₂ x season effect on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ ($P = 0.024$, Table 3.1) and a significant effect on $J_{\text{max-25}}$ across the species ($P = 0.041$, Table 3.1). In particular, values for $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ were significantly higher under aCO₂ compared to

eCO₂ during spring 2014 in both *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.2a) and *M. stipoides* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.2b) and during spring 2015 in *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.2.2a). Similar to $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$, $J_{\text{max-25}}$ values were lower under eCO₂ during spring 2014 in both *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P > 0.1$, Fig.3.2c) and *M. stipoides* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.2d) and during spring 2015 in *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.2c).

Measurement season had a highly significant effect on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ across the CO₂ treatments and species ($P < 0.01$, Table 3.1), with mean values for $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ being higher in spring (89 ± 9 and $115 \pm 7 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) followed by summer (73 ± 4 and $99 \pm 6 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) and autumn seasons (68 ± 4 and $92 \pm 5 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively). Species also differed significantly in terms of $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ values across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P = 0.009$, Table 3.1), with *L. purpurascens* having statistically higher mean $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ (87 ± 5 and $112 \pm 4.8 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) compared to *M. stipoides* (66 ± 3.7 and $91 \pm 4.7 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively). There were no significant CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects on $V_{\text{cmax-25}}$ and $J_{\text{max-25}}$ ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). Taken together, above results indicate a significant decrease in parameters associated with photosynthetic capacity for the dominant C₃ species particularly during the peak growing seasons of spring and coincide with the lack of eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement during these seasons. To determine the cause of this down-regulation in photosynthetic capacity, I further investigated the changes in leaf N content on area basis (N_{area}) and allocation of N to Rubisco under eCO₂.

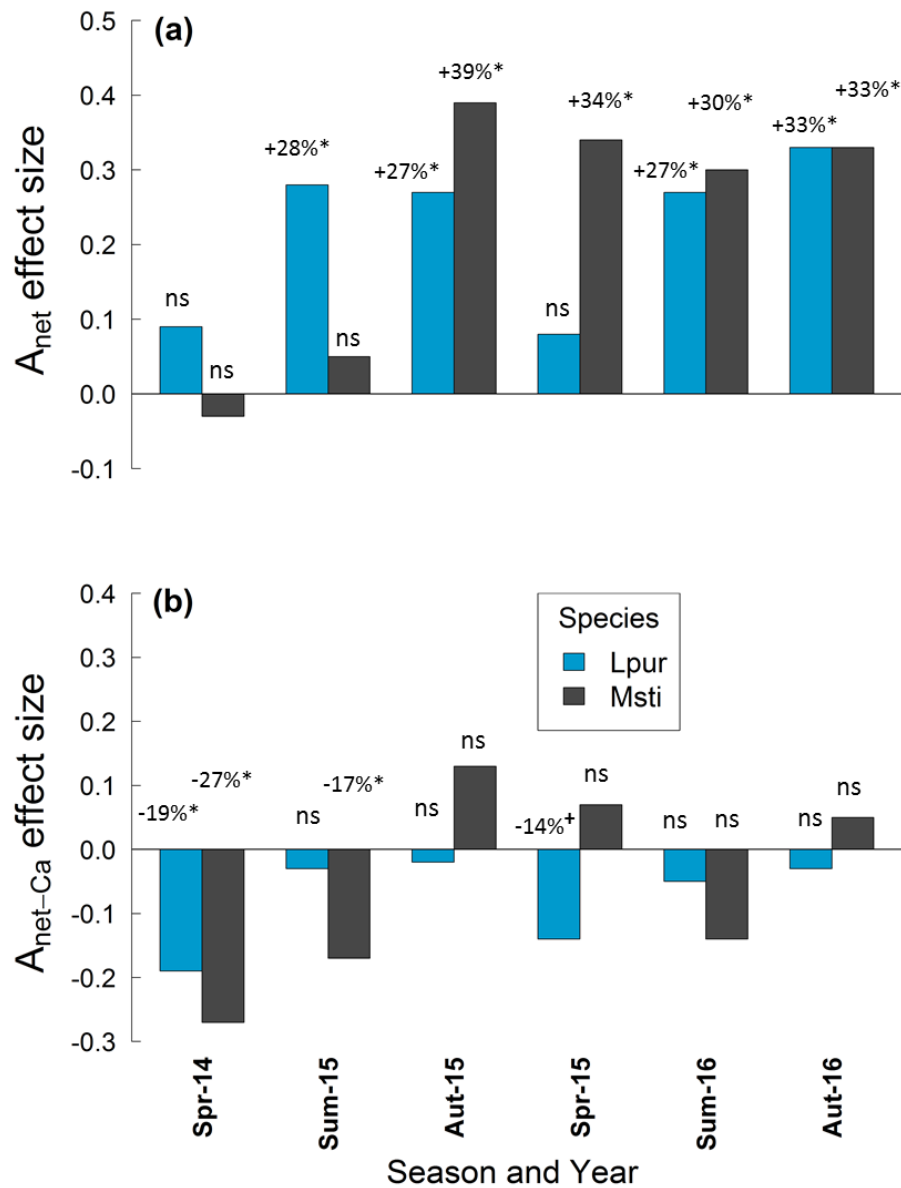


Fig. 3.1 Effects of eCO₂ on light saturated net photosynthetic rates (A_{net}) and light saturated photosynthetic rates measured at common [CO₂] (A_{net-Ca}).

Effects of eCO₂ on (a) A_{net} and (b) A_{net-Ca} are shown for *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. Significant differences between CO₂ treatments within season at $P \leq 0.05$ are denoted by ‘*’, at $P \leq 0.1$ are denoted by ‘+’ and at $P > 0.1$ are denoted by ‘ns’. Bars indicate the effect sizes. Percent change is shown whenever significant. X-axis labels showing measurement seasons and years are spring 2014 (Spr-14), summer 2015 (Sum-15), autumn 2015 (Aut-15), spring 2015 (Spr-14), summer 2016 (Sum-16) and autumn 2016 (Aut-16).

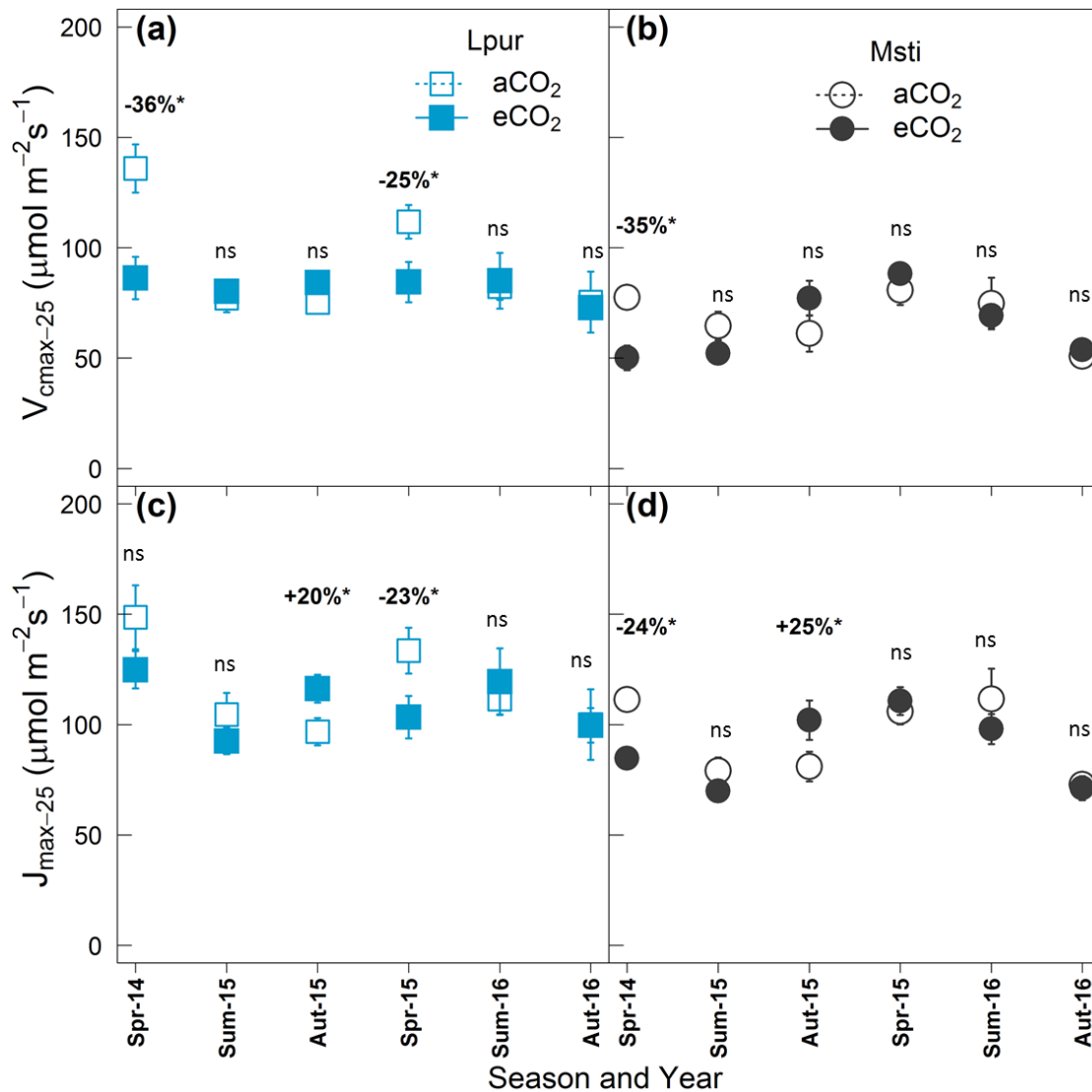


Fig. 3.2 Time course through the six measurement seasons for temperature normalised maximum carboxylation ($V_{cmax-25}$) and electron transport (J_{max-25}) as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on (a) $V_{cmax-25}$ and (b) J_{max-25} are shown for *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. Significant differences between CO₂ treatments within season at $P \leq 0.05$ are denoted by ‘*’, at $P \leq 0.1$ are denoted by ‘+’ and at $P > 0.1$ are denoted by ‘ns’. Percent change is shown whenever significant. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

3.4.3 Effect of CO₂ treatment and season on N content $f_{N-Rubisco}$ and P content

There was no significant overall CO₂ treatment effect on leaf N content (N_{area} and N_{mass}) across the seasons and species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). Also, the split-plot ANOVA did not indicate a statistically significant CO₂ x season interaction effect on N content across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, percent change in N content due to eCO₂ varied among the six measurement seasons for the two species (Fig. 3.3). In particular, N_{area} decreased significantly under eCO₂ during spring 2014 in both *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.3a) and *M. stipoides* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.3b). N_{mass} decreased significantly under eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* (Fig. 3.3c) during spring 2014 (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$). In short, leaf N content, particularly, N_{area} showed a significant decrease under eCO₂ in both the species, but only during spring 2014 (Fig. 3.3).

There was a significant season effect on N_{area} across the CO₂ treatments and species ($P = 0.01$, Table 3.1). On average, the values for N_{area} were higher during the spring and summer ($1.04 \pm 0.027 \text{ g m}^{-2}$) compared to the autumn seasons ($0.90 \pm 0.03 \text{ g m}^{-2}$). However, for N_{mass} , there was only a marginally significant season effect ($P = 0.057$, Table 3.1). Species also differed significantly in terms of N content values across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P = 0.009$, Table 3.1), with *L. purpurascens* having statistically higher N_{area} and N_{mass} ($1.01 \pm 0.02 \text{ g m}^{-2}$ and $32.8 \pm 0.68 \text{ mg g}^{-1}$ respectively) compared to *M. stipoides* ($0.93 \pm 0.018 \text{ g m}^{-2}$ and $28.6 \pm 0.48 \text{ mg g}^{-1}$ respectively). The ANOVA did not indicate a significant CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects for both N_{area} and N_{mass} ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, there was a significant decrease in N_{area} (-16%) and N_{mass} (-14%) as indicated by *t*-test ($P < 0.05$, Fig. 3.3) in *L. purpurascens* during spring 2014. Also, there was a decrease in N_{area} in *M. stipoides* during spring 2014 (-18%) and summer 2016 (-20%). These decreases in leaf N content correlate with decrease in photosynthetic capacity parameters in *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides* during spring 2014.

There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ across the seasons and species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). However, there was a significant CO x season effect on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ across the species ($P = 0.01$, Table 3.1). In particular, $f_{N-Rubisco}$ decreased under eCO₂ during spring 2014 in both *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.4a) and *M. stipoides* (*t*-test, P

< 0.05, Fig.3.4b) and during spring 2015 in *L. purpurascens* (*t*-test, $P < 0.05$, Fig.3.4a). This decrease in $f_{N-Rubisco}$ under eCO₂ during the peak seasons correlates with the photosynthetic capacity down-regulation observed during these seasons (Fig. 3.2). Species also differed significantly in $f_{N-Rubisco}$ across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P < 0.01$, Table 3.1) as *L. purpurascens* showed higher $f_{N-Rubisco}$ (30 ± 0.01 %) compared to *M. stipoides* (25 ± 0.006 %). Overall, there was no significant season, CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1).

Similar to leaf N content, there was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on leaf P content (P_{area} and P_{mass}) across the seasons and species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). Furthermore, the split-plot ANOVA did not indicate a statistically significant CO₂ x season interaction effect on N content across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). There was a marginally significant season effect on P_{area} across the species and CO₂ treatments ($P = 0.056$, Table 3.1), as average values for P_{area} tended to be slightly higher in spring and summer compared to autumn seasons (Fig. 3.5). Species differed significantly in terms of P_{area} and P_{mass} as there was a highly significant species effect on leaf P content across the CO₂ treatments and seasons ($P < 0.001$, Table 3.1). In particular, P_{area} and P_{mass} were higher in *L. purpurascens* (0.044 ± 0.009 g m⁻² and 1.41 ± 0.26 mg g⁻¹ respectively) compared to *M. stipoides* (0.03 ± 0.006 g m⁻² and 1 ± 0.21 mg g⁻¹ respectively). Overall, there were no statistically significant CO₂ x species, season x species and CO₂ x season x species interaction effects on P_{area} and P_{mass} ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.1). Furthermore, there was no statistically significant of CO₂, season and two-way and three-way interaction effect on N: P ratio. The average N: P ratio across the CO₂ treatment, season and species was 30 ± 4 . Species differed significantly in terms of N: P ratio ($P < 0.001$, Table 3.1), as *Lpur* showed lower average N: P ratio (26 ± 3) compared to *Msti* (32 ± 3).

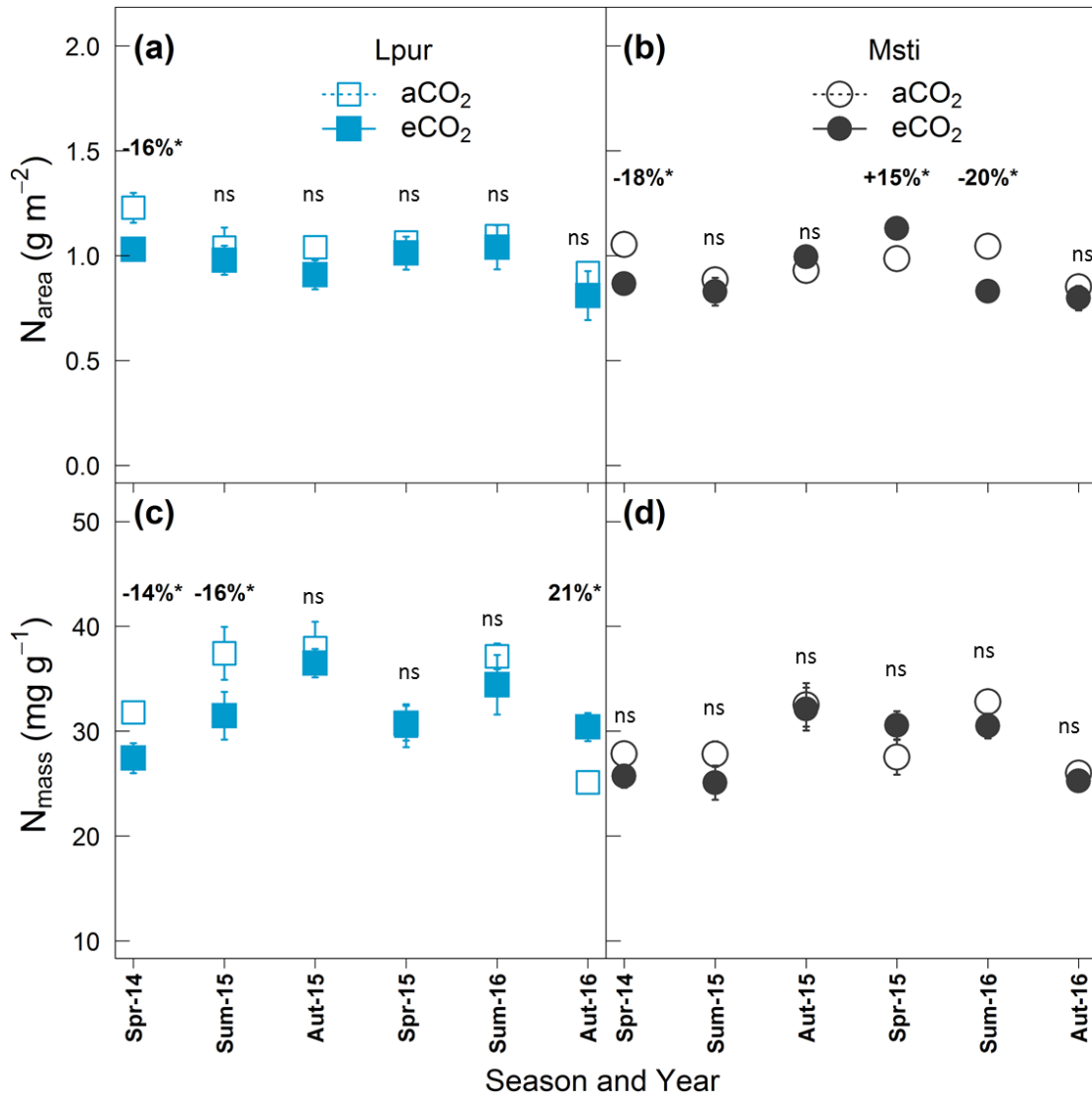


Fig. 3.3 Time course through the six measurement seasons for N content as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on leaf N content (a) on area basis (N_{area}) and (b) mass basis (N_{mass}) are shown for *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. Significant differences between CO₂ treatments within season at $P \leq 0.05$ are denoted by ‘*’, at $P \leq 0.1$ are denoted by ‘+’ and at $P > 0.1$ are denoted by ‘ns’. Percent change is shown whenever significant. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

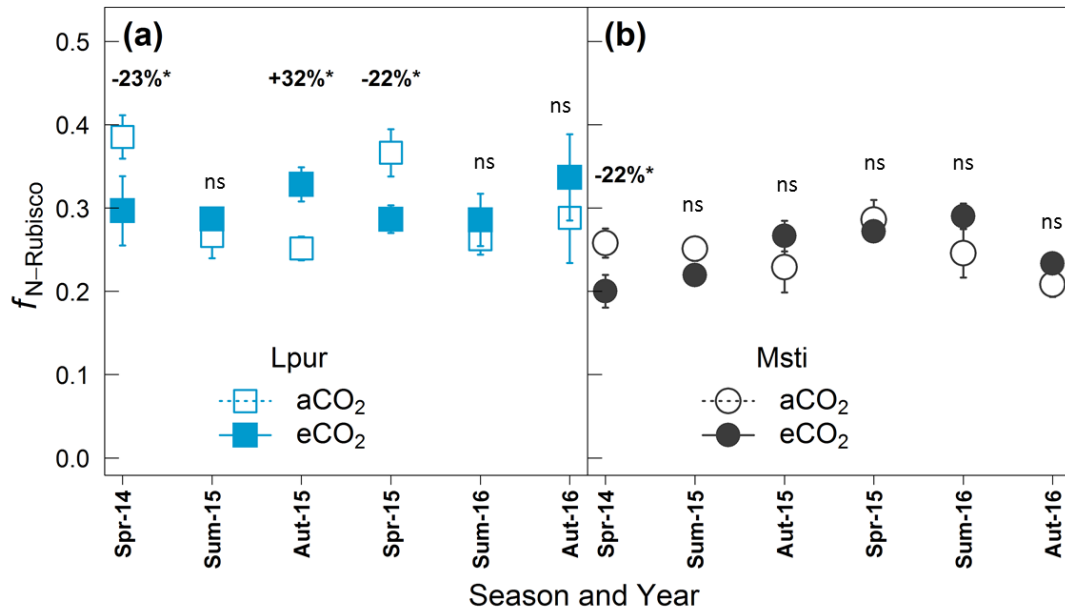


Fig. 3.4 Time course through the six measurement seasons for N allocated to Rubisco enzyme ($f_{N-Rubisco}$) function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ are shown for (a) *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and (b) *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. Significant differences between CO₂ treatments within season at $P \leq 0.05$ are denoted by ‘*’, at $P \leq 0.1$ are denoted by ‘+’ and at $P > 0.1$ are denoted by ‘ns’. Percent change is shown whenever significant. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

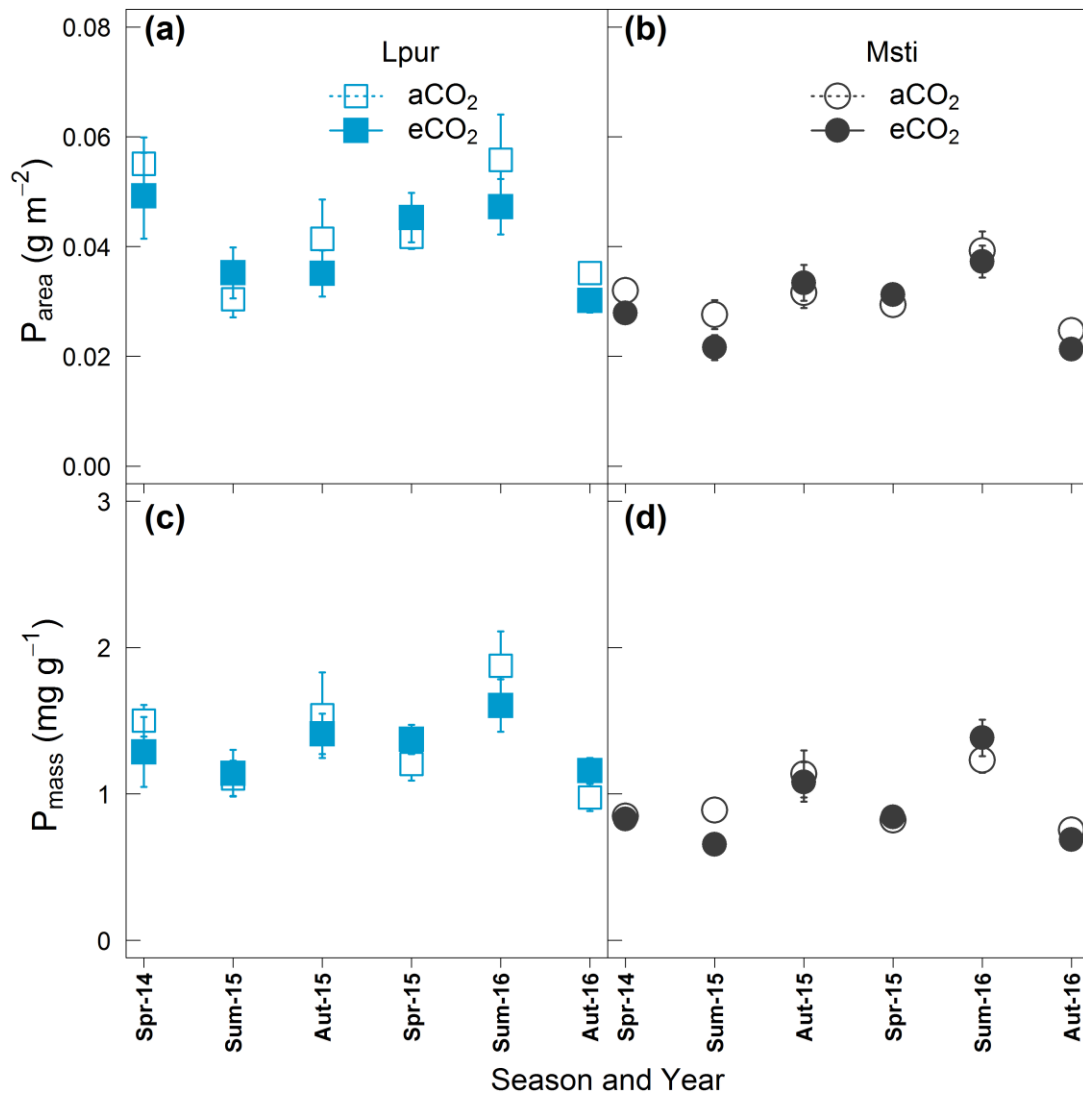


Fig. 3.5 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf P content as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on leaf P content (a) on area basis (P_{area}) and (b) mass basis (P_{mass}) are shown for *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

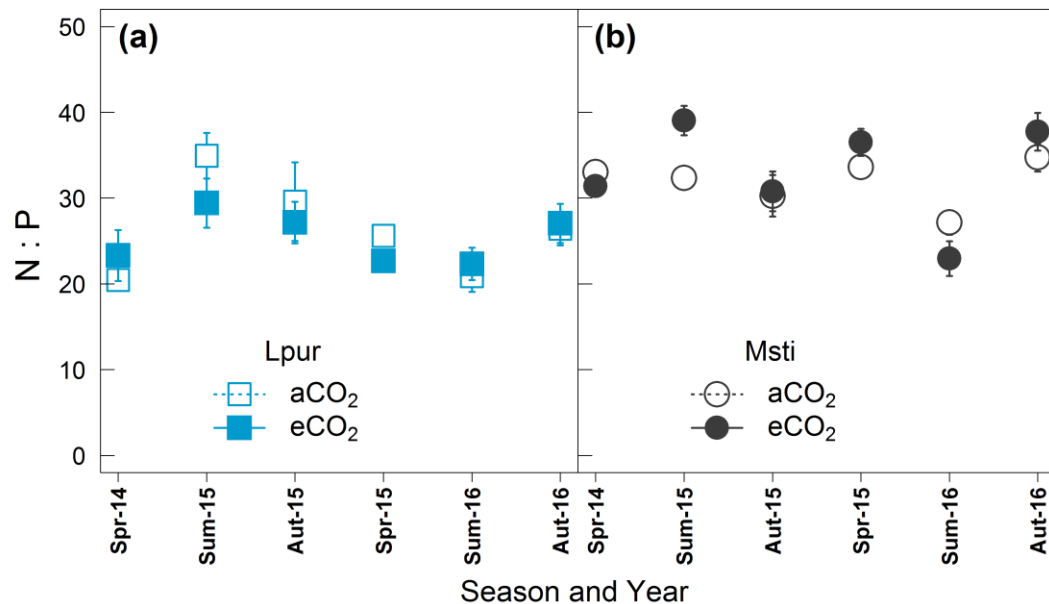


Fig. 3.6 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf nitrogen to phosphorus ratio (N : P) as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on N: P are shown for (a) *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and (b) *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

3.4.4 Effects on CO₂ treatment and year on above-ground biomass

For above-ground biomass measurements, species were grouped into total forbs and total grasses assuming that any eCO₂-induced changes in the understory biomass of forbs and grasses may be largely driven by responses of *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides*. There was no statistically significant CO₂, year and CO₂ x year interaction effect on the standing live above-ground biomass for total forbs and grasses ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.2). There was a highly significant functional type effect on live above-ground biomass ($P < 0.001$, Table 3.2), as forbs had lower above-ground biomass compared to grasses across the two years (Fig. 3.7a, b). Furthermore, there was a statistically significant year x functional group interaction effect ($P = 0.005$, Table 3.2). In particular, forbs showed lower average above-ground biomass in summer 2015 ($10.7 \pm 2.3 \text{ g m}^{-2}$) compared to summer 2016 ($26.5 \pm 4 \text{ g m}^{-2}$), whereas, grasses showed higher average above-ground biomass in summer 2015 ($110 \pm 12.2 \text{ gm}^{-2}$) compared to summer 2016 ($70 \pm 10 \text{ gm}^{-2}$). Greater live above-ground biomass during summer 2015 compared to summer 2016, particularly for the grasses, could be attributed to increase in understory light availability during this period (Duursma *et al.*, 2016) as a result of major psyllid overstory defoliation at the EucFACE site (Gherlenda *et al.*, 2016). There was no significant CO₂ x functional group and CO₂ x year x functional group interaction effect on live above-ground biomass ($P > 0.1$, Table 3.2). I further analysed the effects of CO₂ treatment and measurement year on the total above-ground biomass (total live plus dead biomass). Results for a mixed level split-plot ANOVA are shown in Fig. 3.7 c. There were no statistically significant CO₂, year and CO₂ x year interaction effects on total above-ground biomass ($P > 0.1$, Fig. 3.7). In summary, no significant increase in live grass and forb above-ground biomass and total above-ground biomass was observed under eCO₂ during the two measurement years.

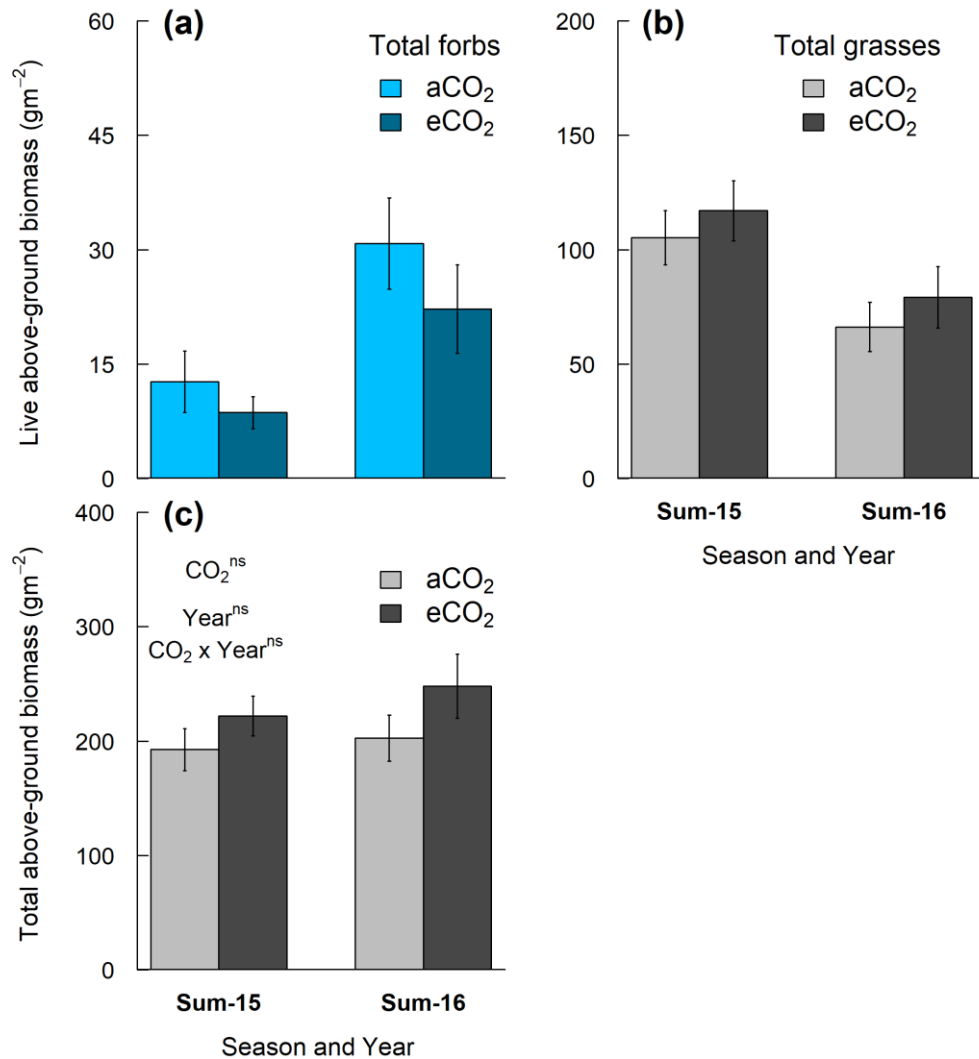


Fig. 3.7 Effects of CO₂ treatment on above-ground biomass of understory species at EucFACE.

Effects of eCO₂ are shown for above-ground biomass of (a) total forbs, (b) total grasses and (c) total above-ground biomass measured during summer 2015 (Sum-15) and summer 2016 (Sum-16). Total above-ground biomass includes total forbs, total grasses and senescent biomass. Results of split-plot ANOVA for total above-ground biomass are shown in panel c. Significant differences at $P < 0.05$ are denoted by * and non-significant differences are denoted by 'ns'. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively.

3.5 Discussion

3.5.1 Seasonal photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂

In this study, I examined the seasonal photosynthetic acclimation and above-ground biomass responses to eCO₂ in the understory herbaceous species growing naturally in a warm-climate *Eucalyptus* woodland. My first hypothesis, that there would be larger down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ during the autumn season than spring and summer due to the lower growth sink capacity in that season, was not supported. While the average eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement across the seasons in the current study was moderate ($\approx 23\%$), there was a considerable variation in the relative photosynthetic enhancement among the seasons as well as the species (Fig. 3.1a). During the two spring seasons, lack of photosynthetic enhancement in the C₃ forb under eCO₂ was accompanied by reductions in photosynthetic capacity (Fig. 3.1b and 3.2). Furthermore, lack of photosynthetic enhancement in the C₃ grass under eCO₂ during spring 2014 was accompanied by reductions in photosynthetic capacity (Fig. 3.1a and Fig.3.2). For the remaining measurement seasons, including autumn, there was no evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ for either of the species in this study. Taken together, these results provide some evidence for photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂, during the peak growing season of spring, thus contrasting the first hypothesis (H1). Also, in contrast to the second hypothesis (H2), I did not observe a significant increase in above-ground biomass under eCO₂ for the understory grasses and the understory forbs measured in the subsequent summers (Fig. 3.5).

Earlier studies reporting seasonal photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ have often cited sink limitation hypothesis (Stitt, 1991) as a mechanism for lower photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ during seasons with lowered sink capacities (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003b, Lewis *et al.*, 1996). In particular, during active growth period like spring, sink capacity will be higher and hence there should be no down-regulation. Since autumn is characterised by low growth and hence sink capacity, I expected a significant photosynthetic capacity down-regulation (H1), and indeed lower V_{cmax} and J_{max} were exhibited in both species in this season than for the other seasons. However, in contrast to my expectation (H1) there was no evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ during the

autumn season in either of the species. I observed a down-regulation response during spring, a favourable growing period for these species, when growth and carbohydrate sinks are expected to be large, but N concentrations in leaves were lowest. Therefore, results from the current study suggest that sink limitation hypothesis may not be the possible explanation for down-regulation observed under eCO₂ during the physiologically active season. A general decrease in leaf N content under eCO₂ has been frequently observed in field experiments on the grasses and forbs (Aranjuelo *et al.*, 2011, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Lee *et al.*, 2011) and is consistent with the results from the current study for some time points. For the dominant C₃ forb, down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity observed during spring 2014 was accompanied by significant decrease in N_{area} (-16%) and N_{mass} (-14%, Fig. 3.3a and c). For the C₃ grass, down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity observed during spring 2014 was accompanied by significant decrease in N_{area} (-18%, Fig. 3.3b). Thus, down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ in the current study, observed during spring 2014 in both the dominant C₃ species, could be attributed to the decrease in leaf N concentrations, which may occur due to accumulation of soluble carbohydrates under eCO₂ (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Long *et al.*, 2004), low soil N availability (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004) or negative effects of eCO₂ on plant N acquisition (Feng *et al.*, 2015). However, down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ was also observed during spring 2015 in the C₃ forb, but was not accompanied by a corresponding decrease in N content. This suggests that decrease in leaf N content may not be a sole mechanism of photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ in the current study, although it may be an important contributing factor. A protein specific down-regulation of the Rubisco enzyme (Aranjuelo *et al.*, 2011, Rogers & Ellsworth, 2002) seems to be a more plausible explanation for the photosynthetic capacity downregulation under eCO₂ in the current study. There was a lower allocation of N to Rubisco under eCO₂ (\approx -22%) during the two spring seasons in the C₃ forb and one spring season in the C₃ grass (Fig. 3.4) which corresponds to the down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity (\approx -28%) during these time points (Fig. 3.2). Whereas, allocation of N to Rubisco under eCO₂ was maintained during the other seasons, including autumn, when there was no evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation. This eCO₂-induced protein specific down-regulation provides

N that can be re-allocated towards other protein-requiring systems (Sage, 1994, Sharwood *et al.*, 2017).

3.5.2 Elevated CO₂ does not stimulate above-ground biomass in the herbaceous understory species

Modelling studies based on the Rubisco kinetics of the C₃ species have predicted a 35% increase in net primary productivity in the warmer ecosystems, compared to the 26% predicted for temperate ecosystems (Collatz *et al.*, 1991, Farquhar *et al.*, 1980, Hickler *et al.*, 2008). To test the above prediction, I investigated the responses of standing above-ground biomass to eCO₂ during the two summer seasons for all the grasses and forbs growing in the understory of a warm-temperate *Eucalyptus* woodland (Fig. 3.7). Considering that *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides* are the most dominant species (Hasegawa *et al.*, 2018), any changes in the total above-ground forb and grass biomass may be a result of responses in these two dominant species to eCO₂. There was a lack of statistically significant stimulation under eCO₂ in total live above-ground biomass of the forbs and grasses as well as total biomass (Fig. 3.7), in spite of a significant increase in photosynthetic rates of the two dominant species. Thus, results for the understory species from the current study do not support the general expectation of higher relative increase in biomass under eCO₂ for warm ecosystem species compared to cold temperate ecosystems (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013). The possible factors responsible for this lack of biomass stimulation under eCO₂ for species from a warm-temperate ecosystem are discussed in the following sections.

Lack of an eCO₂-induced biomass stimulation in the understory species has often been associated with decrease in light availability because of increase in overstory biomass and leaf area (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007). Like the previous studies (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015), I observed a lack of stimulation in above-ground biomass of the understory species in the current study. However, it is unlikely that responses of overstory trees to eCO₂ may have contributed to lack of biomass enhancement in the understory species. This is because, there was no significant decrease in light levels under eCO₂ in the current study (Fig. S. 3.1). Also, recent studies conducted at the EucFACE site suggest that eCO₂ does not cause increase in leaf area index or other

components of above-ground biomass in the overstory trees because of which understory light levels in eCO₂ plots did not decrease (Duursma *et al.*, 2016, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017). Thus, in contrast to previous studies (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015, Sefcik *et al.*, 2007) decreased understory light availability due to increase in overstory biomass under eCO₂ is not a possible explanation for lack of biomass enhancement in understory species in the current study.

The absence of an eCO₂ effect on biomass enhancement could instead be related to soil moisture availability (see Pathare *et al.*, 2017 and Chapter 2), if dry periods are of relatively moderate duration and intensity. Previous studies conducted on the herbaceous species particularly in the water-limited ecosystems report that, eCO₂-induced soil water savings can eliminate plant water limitation and also enhance soil nutrient availability thus supporting relatively greater biomass compared to aCO₂ (Grünzweig & Körner, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Polley *et al.*, 2012a). The *Eucalyptus* woodland in the current study is seasonally water-limited, suggesting that interaction between CO₂ and water availability will have a significant effect on understory biomass response to eCO₂. In Chapter 2, I observed a larger relative enhancement of photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ during dry periods, which leads to the expectation that relative enhancement of understory biomass could also be reported during the dry periods. However, there was no significant stimulation of above-ground biomass under eCO₂ in the understory species (Fig. 3.7). One possible explanation for this finding is that the biomass harvest was conducted only during summer 2015 and summer 2016, which were relatively wet periods for this ecosystems since a cumulative precipitation of > 200 mm was received in the two summer months prior to the biomass harvest (Fig. 2.1). Thus, lack of relative increase in biomass under eCO₂ during the wet summer seasons could be attributed to greater precipitation. This leads to the question regarding the effects of eCO₂ on the understory biomass during the relatively dry periods at EucFACE site. In a recent study at EucFACE, Collins *et al.*, (2018) used a repeat near-surface digital photography to quantify the effects of water availability and eCO₂ on understory live foliage biomass and biomass cover over three growing seasons. Their findings suggest that eCO₂ did not increase herbaceous cover and biomass over the duration of their three-year experiment, not even during the periods of low water availability. Taken together, findings from the current study along with those

of Collins *et al.*, (2018) suggest that, though future increases in eCO₂ may cause a relative enhancement of photosynthetic rates during dry periods, this may not lead to increase in understory productivity in warm-temperate grassy woodlands of Australia.

Besides lack of soil water savings, low soil nutrient availability may also constrain the biomass enhancement under eCO₂. Since, a large proportion of leaf N is invested in the photosynthetic proteins (Evans, 1989), soil N availability has been suggested as an important determinant of photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Reich *et al.*, 2006a). In accordance with this expectation, earlier studies conducted in the cold temperate grasslands and forest ecosystems report a lower stimulation of biomass under eCO₂ due to insufficient N availability (Oren *et al.*, 2001, Reich & Hobbie, 2013). In the heavily weathered soils common in warmer ecosystems, P tends to be more limiting than N (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013). However, experiments addressing effects of eCO₂ on plants growing in P-limited soils are rare. Some limited number of studies conducted suggest a limited biomass stimulation under eCO₂ due to low soil P availability (Edwards *et al.*, 2005, Grünzweig & Körner, 2003, Lewis *et al.*, 2010, Shaw *et al.*, 2002). The *Eucalyptus* woodland in the current study was shown to be P-limited, with the leaf N: P ratio of ≈ 23 for the *Eucalyptus* trees (Crous *et al.*, 2015). Also, a recent study from the site (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017), on growth responses of mature *Eucalyptus* trees to eCO₂, observed a lack of stimulation in any of the above-ground biomass components which they suggest was a result of low soil P availability. At vegetation level, N: P ratios < 10 have often been considered to indicate N-limited biomass production, whereas, ratios > 20 indicate P-limited biomass production (Güsewell, 2004). In the current study, I observed an average leaf N: P ratio of ≈ 26 and ≈ 32 for two dominant understory species, *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides* respectively, across the six measurement seasons and CO₂ treatments (Fig. 3.6). This N: P ratio > 20 indicates that the understory species in current study were limited by soil P availability. Thus, in addition to lack of eCO₂-induced soil water savings, greater P-limitation, could be another possible element contributing to the lack of relative increase in above-ground biomass of the understory herbaceous species in the current study. Current understanding about how low P availability constrains plant biomass responses to eCO₂ is still limited (Deng *et al.*, 2015). One of the possible explanations for this include limited rate of RuBP regeneration,

probably through inhibition of the Calvin cycle (Campbell & Sage, 2006) or reduced photorespiration under eCO₂ leading to reduced availability of photorespiration-recycled P (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2015, Harley & Sharkey, 1991).

A lack of stimulation of plant growth and biomass, despite increases in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂, has been observed previously for trees as well as herbaceous species (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Norby *et al.*, 2010, Reich & Hobbie, 2013, Sigurdsson *et al.*, 2013). Similarly, lack of biomass stimulation despite increases in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ was reported for the herbaceous understory species in the current study. This discrepancy between photosynthesis and biomass could be attributed to increase in carbohydrate availability exceeding the plants' capability to process it due to nutrient and inherent growth limitations (Kirschbaum, 2011). This disconnect between photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ leads to the question about the fate of the C assimilated under eCO₂. Some of the possible pathways for extra C assimilated under eCO₂ include: increased plant and soil respiration (Adair *et al.*, 2011, Drake *et al.*, 2016), increased root exudates and export to mycorrhiza and other microbes (Cheng *et al.*, 2012, Phillips *et al.*, 2011, Phillips *et al.*, 2012) and increased root growth under nutrient limited conditions (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Nie *et al.*, 2013). Since, the soil of grassy woodland in current study is P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015), it is possible that the extra C assimilated is being invested in below-ground growth, although detailed discussion is beyond the scope of current study due to lack of root biomass data. Alternatively, a recent study from EucFACE (Drake *et al.*, 2016) provides an evidence of initial stimulation of root and/or rhizosphere respiration thus returning the assimilated C back to the atmosphere. However, there are still open questions regarding the nature of this P limitation and how it constrains the eCO₂ response.

3.5.3 Conclusions

In summary, I investigated the effects of eCO₂ on the seasonal photosynthetic responses of two dominant understory herbaceous C₃ species and the above-ground biomass responses of total understory herbaceous species during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at EucFACE. Elevated CO₂ stimulated photosynthetic rates in the dominant C₃ species by an average of 23% across the seasons. However, there was also a limited

evidence of seasonal acclimation as photosynthetic capacities decreased significantly under eCO₂ during the peak season of spring leading to lack of A_{net} enhancement. Furthermore, eCO₂ did not stimulate live above-ground forb and grass biomass as well as total above-ground biomass (live plus senescent) measured during the subsequent summer seasons. I conclude that, lack of eCO₂-induced ‘water-savings effect’ and higher P-limitations could be the possible elements contributing to lack of relative increases in above-ground biomass under eCO₂ in these understory species. The warm water-limited ecosystems have been predicted to be major C sinks due to greater photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ (Ahlström *et al.*, 2015). However, the lack of biomass stimulation in the understory species during the summer season, reported in the current study, indicate a limited capacity of these herbaceous species to sequester extra C in future.

3.6 Supplementary information

3.6.1 Supplementary figures

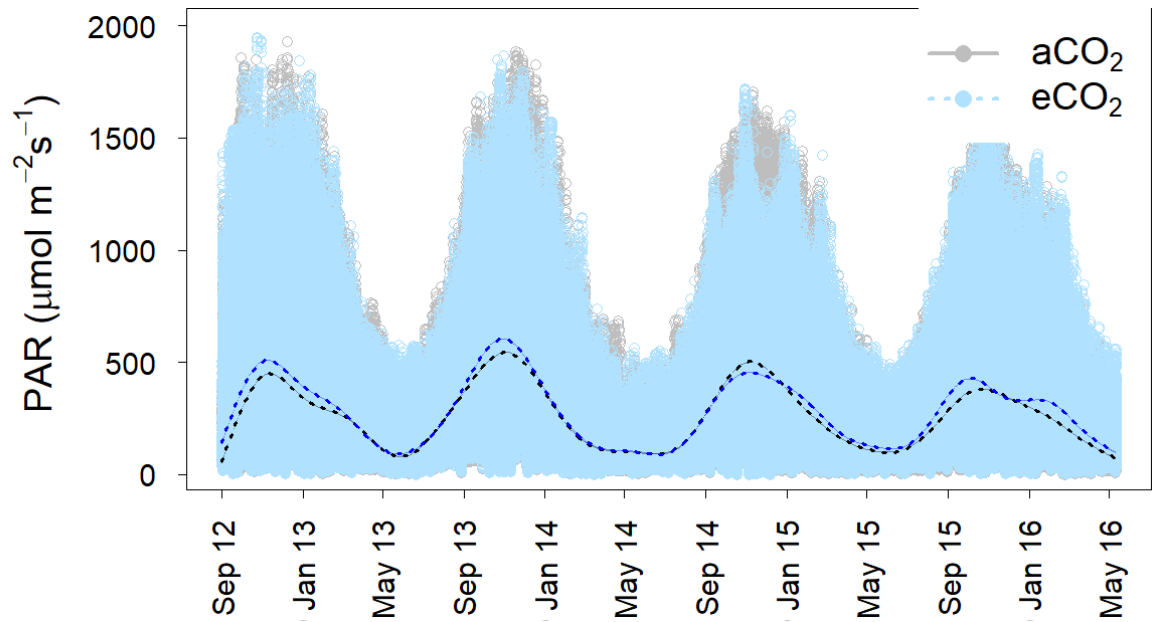


Fig. S 3.1 Understory light levels at the EucFACE site measured in aCO₂ (gray points) and eCO₂ plots (blue points). Smoothed regressions with 95% confidence intervals are shown for aCO₂ (black line) and eCO₂ (blue line).

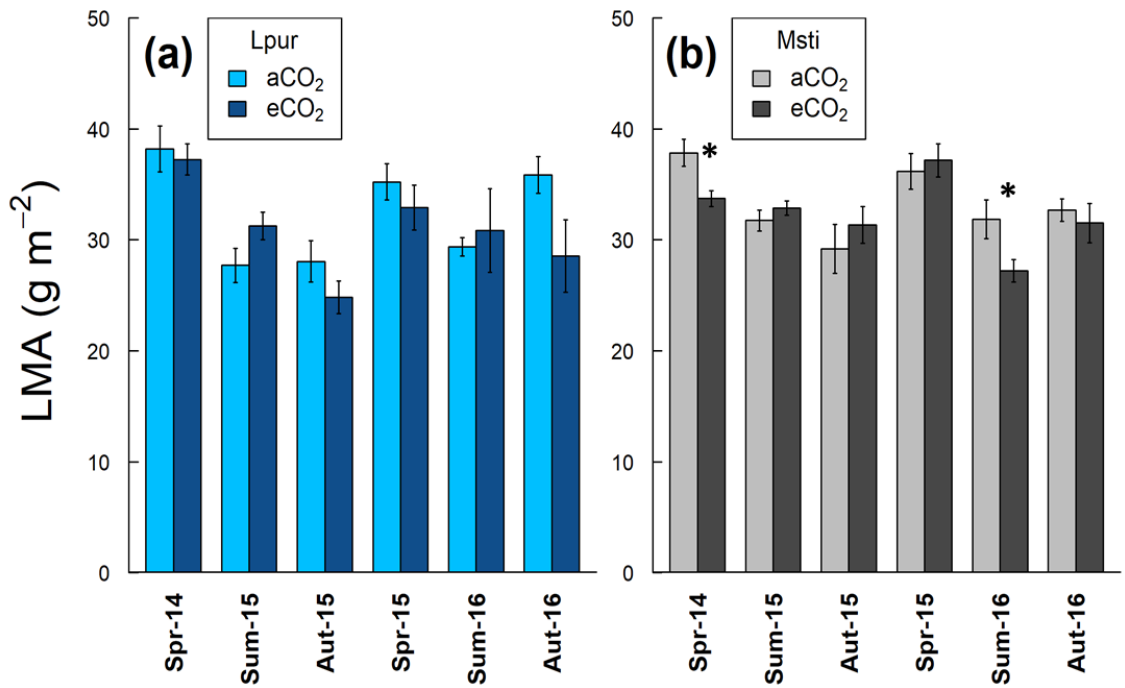


Fig. S 3.2 Time course through the six measurement seasons for leaf mass per area (LMA; g m⁻²) as a function of CO₂ treatment.

Effects of eCO₂ on LMA are shown for (a) *L. purpurascens* (Lpur) and (b) *M. stipoides* (Msti) measured for six seasons. aCO₂ and eCO₂ in the legends denote ambient and elevated CO₂ treatments respectively. Significant differences at $P < 0.05$ are denoted by *.

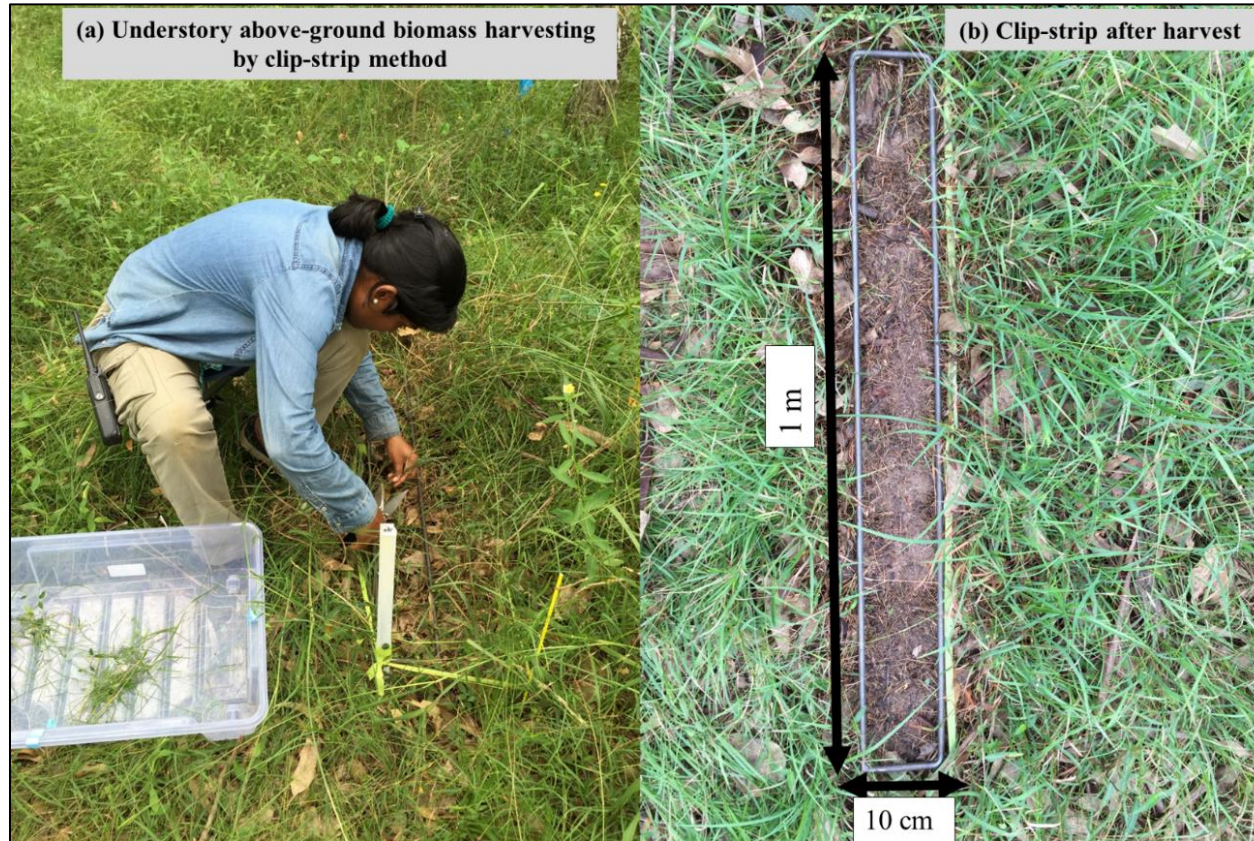


Image 3.1 Above-ground biomass harvest of understory species at EucFACE.

(a) The author carrying out above-ground biomass harvest of the understory species growing naturally at the EucFACE facility using the clip-strip method. (b) View of one clip-strip after the harvest is completed. Biomass harvest was carried out at four different locations in each CO₂ plot using a steel frame of 1m x 10 cm dimensions in order to maintain the accurate size of each strip. Photo courtesy: Mr Sachin Chavan.

Chapter 4 : Differential photosynthetic and biomass responses of C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs to elevated CO₂

4.1 Abstract

Understanding how a set of coexisting species, provided with similar resources for growth, may respond differently to eCO₂ is critical for predicting future ecosystem composition. I designed a glasshouse experiment to test whether the species or functional groups differed in their photosynthetic or biomass allocation and growth responses to eCO₂ for two C₃ forbs and two C₃ grasses. The four species were grown as monocultures under limited nutrient availability and unlimited water supply. C₃ forbs exhibited a strong down-regulation in photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂, for parameters like maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax} , -48%) and electron transport capacity (J_{max} , -41%), whereas grasses did not. Consequently, photosynthetic rates were markedly enhanced for C₃ grasses (+68%) in 570 ppm eCO₂, but not significantly enhanced for C₃ forbs. Photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs could not be attributed to decrease in N content (N_{area}), since N_{area} was maintained under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs but decreased in C₃ grasses. Average N_{area} was lower in the C₃ forbs (0.70 g m⁻²) compared to the C₃ grasses (1.05 g m⁻²). Also, apparent fraction of N allocated to Rubisco enzyme ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) under eCO₂ decreased in the C₃ forbs (-50%) but was maintained in the C₃ grasses. Above differences in average leaf N content and allocation of N to portions of the photosynthetic apparatus might be responsible for differences in CO₂ responsiveness in the C₃ forbs and C₃ grasses. C₃ forbs also differed from the C₃ grasses in terms of above-ground biomass allocation responses to eCO₂, as leaf area ratio decreased significantly under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs (-48%), but increased in the C₃ grasses (+80%). Total biomass remained unchanged under eCO₂ in the C₃ grasses, but decreased significantly in the C₃ forbs (-37%). Differences in photosynthesis and biomass allocation responses to eCO₂ between the C₃ forbs and C₃ grasses suggest that the grasses might obtain greater dominance in C₃-dominated herbaceous ecosystems under eCO₂.

4.2 Introduction

A well-documented effect of ongoing rise in atmospheric CO₂ levels is an increase in leaf net photosynthetic rates (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Leakey *et al.*, 2009, Long *et al.*, 2004). Since the C₃ photosynthetic pathway is CO₂-limited at current atmospheric [CO₂], C₃ plants have been expected to photosynthesize at higher rates under elevated CO₂ (eCO₂) because of increase in the carboxylation of Rubisco enzyme and decrease in the photorespiratory carbon loss (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Long *et al.*, 2004). However, the magnitude of photosynthetic stimulation observed under eCO₂ in the C₃ species does not always match theoretical expectations (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Lee *et al.*, 2011, Nowak *et al.*, 2004). Whilst all C₃ plants contain essentially the same Rubisco enzyme which is highly conserved (Andersson & Backlund, 2008), species still vary significantly in their responses to eCO₂ (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Lee *et al.*, 2001, Reich *et al.*, 2004). Considering the wide variety of plant species, some kind of grouping based on plant traits has been viewed essential for generalizing about their responses to eCO₂ (Poorter & Navas, 2003, Reich *et al.*, 2001). In accordance with this, different types of plant species have been grouped into broad functional groups depending on the key structural and functional traits like photosynthetic rates, specific leaf area, root foraging capacities, plant nutrient content and ability to fix atmospheric N (Lavorel *et al.*, 1997, Reich *et al.*, 2001). These traits are also central to how different species respond to rising atmospheric CO₂ (Poorter & Navas, 2003, Woodward & Cramer, 1996), because they influence the carbon acquisition and storage capacities, water uptake and use, nutrient acquisition and allocation patterns and plant relative growth rates (Adler *et al.*, 2014, Ali *et al.*, 2013). Consequently, functional groups have been used for capturing the aggregated responses of different types of species to eCO₂ by both empirical and modelling studies (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Poorter & Navas, 2003, Wullschleger *et al.*, 2014, but see Hovenden & Williams, 2010, Lee *et al.*, 2011).

Theory and empirical evidence suggest that enhancement of plant photosynthesis and growth under eCO₂ will be sustained only under sufficient nutrient availability (Rastetter & Shaver, 1992, Reich *et al.*, 2006a). For example, in contrast to high nutrient availability, low nutrient availability may result in down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity, lower

stimulation of photosynthetic rates (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004), lack of an increase in biomass and altered above and below ground biomass allocation in C₃ plants growing under eCO₂ (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Reich *et al.*, 2006a). However, these responses do not typify all plant functional groups, because even plants growing under similar soil nutrient availability have been reported to differ in their responses to eCO₂, possibly due to differences in nutrient acquisition and allocation capacities (Ainsworth *et al.*, 2003b, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). In a study conducted on trees growing in N-limited conditions, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2012 reported photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ in *Pinus taeda*, but not in the co-occurring deciduous species which they attributed to different strategies for acquiring and allocating N to photosynthesis. Furthermore, some studies on herbaceous species suggest that the photosynthesis and biomass responses of C₃ forbs may be more sensitive to eCO₂ compared to grasses (Polley *et al.*, 2012b, Polley *et al.*, 2003, Teyssonneyre *et al.*, 2002). For instance, growth at eCO₂ increased total biomass by 31% in C₃ forbs, but only by 9% in C₃ grasses and the response was independent of soil N supply (Reich *et al.*, 2001). Furthermore, eCO₂ coupled with infrequent cutting significantly increased the proportion of forbs and reduced that of grasses (Teyssonneyre *et al.*, 2002). In contrast to the positive CO₂ effects on C₃ forbs in some studies (Reich *et al.*, 2001, Teyssonneyre *et al.*, 2002), Crous *et al.*, 2010 observed a strong down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity accompanied by lack of photosynthetic enhancement in response to eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs, but not in the C₃ grasses. How or why might C₃ forbs respond differently to eCO₂ than other functional groups like grasses? Examination of key structural and functional traits, associated with biomass allocation patterns and nutrient content and use capacities, shared by the species in functional groups may help us better understand the causes for these differential responses (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Poorter & Bongers, 2006).

The goal of my experiment was to examine how co-existing C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs, provided with similar water inputs and nutrient supply from the soil for growth, may respond differently to eCO₂. To address this goal, I examined the photosynthesis and biomass growth responses of two C₃ grasses and two C₃ forbs growing in a low-nutrient soil in an environmentally controlled glasshouse experiment. The C₃ species used in this study are ecologically important and common to the understory of a nutrient-limited

Eucalyptus woodland ecosystem (Tozer, 2003). The soil of this *Eucalyptus* woodland is P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015). But, since photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ in the C₃ species is often associated with changes in leaf N content and allocation patterns (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Lee *et al.*, 2011, Long *et al.*, 2004), I hypothesized that (H1), photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ will be manifested as decrease in leaf N content and/or protein specific down-regulation of Rubisco enzyme. I further hypothesized that (H2), down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ would result in little or no enhancement of photosynthetic rates and biomass in a nutrient poor soil. The species were grouped into C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs in order to assess whether these groupings represent species responses within their respective functional group. An examination of the species and functional group responses to eCO₂ under common resource availability and climate may improve our capacity to generalize herbaceous plant community responses to climate change (Poorter & Navas, 2003, Wullschleger *et al.*, 2014).

4.3 Material and Methods

4.3.1 Species under study and growth conditions

The glasshouse experiment was designed to simulate the growth conditions experienced by the herbaceous species growing in local Cumberland plain woodland as a major ecosystem type in the region. I selected four evergreen herbaceous species, two C₃ grasses- *M. stipoides*, *L. purpurascens* and two C₃ forbs- *S. madagascariensis* and *N. neesiana*, for this study (see Image 1.2 and section 1.8 of Chapter 1 for details). These four species occur in the understory of nearby CPW on a nutrient poor soil that is P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015). In the figures, the four species are denoted by the genus initial and the first three letters of the species name.

For the glasshouse experiment, seeds of three species were collected from a local patch of CPW, whereas *L. purpurascens* was propagated through cuttings collected from CPW. Due to the longer time required for establishment, cuttings of *L. purpurascens* were planted 20 days before seeds of other species were sown for germination. This facilitated simultaneous transplanting of 40 days old *L. purpurascens* cuttings and 20 days old seedlings of other species germinated from seeds. Seeds were sown in seedling trays containing seed germination mixture.. During the duration of experiment, all the seedlings were germinated and maintained in naturally lit glasshouse chambers using temperatures of 26 °C during the day (10 am to 4 pm) and 16 °C at night (8 pm to 6 am) with a step transition of 20 °C in between (see Fig. S4.2), similar to spring-time temperatures in the locality. After establishment, the seedlings were transplanted in 10 L cylindrical polyvinyl chloride pots in four glasshouse chambers located at the Western Sydney University, Richmond, NSW, Australia.

Out of the four chambers, two were set at ambient CO₂ (aCO₂) concentrations (400 μmol mol⁻¹) and other two at elevated CO₂ (eCO₂) concentrations (550 μmol mol⁻¹) during the duration of experiment (see Fig. S4.1a). The eCO₂ treatment represents the predicted atmospheric CO₂ concentrations by 2050 (IPCC, 2013) as well as the target eCO₂ concentrations at the EucFACE experiment (see Gimeno *et al.*, 2016). The CO₂ concentration was continuously monitored and controlled (Argus Control Systems Ltd,

White Rock, BC1). Humidity levels in the chambers were maintained at 60 % during the day (8 am to 4 pm, see Fig. S4.1b) using a centrifugal humidifier (HumiDisk 65, Carel industries, Padova – Italy) . Average daily light levels in the glasshouse during the period from 10 am to 2 pm were $\approx 500 \mu\text{mol quanta m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ (see Fig. S4.1c) with highest intensity light levels ($>1000 \mu\text{mol quanta m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$) lasting at least 15 min per day. As the experiment was conducted in autumn through winter months, additional light of about $200 \mu\text{mol quanta m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ was supplemented late during the day (from 3 pm to 5 pm) in order to extend day length.

The aim of current experiment was to study the photosynthetic and biomass responses to $e\text{CO}_2$ for some key C_3 grasses and C_3 forbs, on a low-nutrient soil. Given that the CPW tract near Richmond, NSW Australia ($33^\circ 37' \text{ S}$, $150^\circ 44.3' \text{ E}$) was found to be P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015), I used the surface soil excavated from the top 30 cm layer in a remnant patch of CPW. I did not fertilize the soil during the whole duration of our experiment in order to maintain the nutrient-limited conditions. The soil was sieved to remove plant parts, homogenized and then filled into pots with a diameter of 15 cm and height of 40 cm. The pot size was assumed to be sufficient enough for the species in this study, as the fully-grown individuals of these species have relatively small dry mass (less than 4 g per individual). The weight of each pot was recorded and then 11 kg of air-dry soil was filled. Field capacity was identified to be 16.5% gravimetric soil moisture (G_{SWC}) which corresponded to 23.5 % volumetric soil water content (V_{SWC}) for this bulk density of soil. The field capacity of EucFACE soil (18 % V_{SWC}) was different from that of the soil used in glasshouse study (23.5 % V_{SWC}). This is because soil used in the glasshouse experiment was not excavated from EucFACE, but from an open area adjacent to EucFACE. Also, in the process of mixing and sieving soil for potting, its aggregation structure is destroyed, dead plant material is removed and soil is compacted into pots. These factors can lead to differences in field capacity between the EucFACE soil and the soil used in glasshouse. All the pots were watered to 92% field capacity (15.4% G_{SWC}) and then 20 day old seedlings of the three species and the cuttings of *L. purpurascens* were transplanted into the pots as monocultures of four individuals of same species in each pot. Measurements were conducted on the species individual growing in the center of the pot.

I also included a water treatment in the overall experiment though I selected the well-watered conditions here as there was no significant effect of water treatment in the experiment. During the first three weeks of the experiment, the pots were maintained at 15.4% G_{SWC} to ensure seedling establishment. Drought treatment was initiated at the end of third week following the procedure used in Dijkstra *et al.*, 2010 with some modifications. The drought treatment, not reported further in this manuscript, was initiated by discontinuing the watering until half of the pots in each chamber dried down to 9.12 % of G_{SWC} ($\approx 13\%$ of V_{SWC}), whereas the other half were maintained at 15.4% G_{SWC} ($\approx 22\%$ of V_{SWC}). 15.4 % of G_{SWC} (Water sufficient/ WS) and 9.12 % of G_{SWC} (Water limited/ WL) corresponded to $\approx 92\%$ and $\approx 55\%$ of field capacity respectively. During the 10 week duration of experiment, the plants were subjected to water-limited conditions for seven weeks in total. A soil moisture probe was used to determine the V_{SWC} at biweekly intervals up to a depth of 20 cm (HydroSense II, Campbell Scientific). Across all the four glasshouse chambers, I had ten pots of each treatment combination (ten pots x four species x two CO_2 treatments x two water treatments = 160 pots). Pots were arranged in blocks with ten blocks per chamber (five WS plus five WL blocks) and each block consisting one replicate pot per species. To reduce chamber effects, I swapped the pots (while maintain the block arrangement) between the chambers with respective CO_2 treatments once in every 15 days during the whole duration of this experiment.

4.3.2 Gas exchange measurements

To assess the effects of eCO_2 on the photosynthetic parameters of the C_3 species growing in nutrient-limited soil, gas exchange measurements were conducted using the Li-6400 portable photosynthesis system (LI-6400XT, Li-Cor, Lincoln, USA) at the mean growth CO_2 concentration for each treatment ($\approx 410 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for aCO_2 and $\approx 560 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for eCO_2). To determine the effects of eCO_2 on photosynthetic capacities of the species, photosynthetic CO_2 response curves (A_{net} - C_i curves) were measured. Gas-exchange measurements were carried out five days before the final harvest. Measurements were taken around mid-day (10:00-14:00) on top-most fully-expanded leaves. Multiple non-overlapping leaves were placed across the Li-COR chamber and a minimum time of 15-min was allowed for stabilisation of gas exchange before commencing measurements.

After stabilisation, an initial measurement of net CO₂ assimilation rate (A_{net} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) was conducted at growth CO₂ concentration ($\approx 400 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for aCO₂ and $\approx 550 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ for eCO₂), followed by the $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curves. $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curves for the four species were done with ten different steps of CO₂ concentrations (40, 150, 210, 300, 420, 590, 1000, 1200, 1500 and 1800 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$) while maintaining saturating light conditions (photon flux density of 1500 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$), 55 – 65 % relative humidity and leaf temperatures of 26 °C and allowing a stabilization time of two-three minutes after each step change in [CO₂]. During the $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ measurements, [CO₂] in the cuvette was controlled as reference. A minimum 3-5 replicate plants per treatment condition were measured. In total 36 $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curves were measured in three days using three Li-6400s at the rate of four $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curves per Li-6400 per day (see Chapter 2 for calibration details). After each $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ response curve, leaves were marked to assess the correct leaf area in the chamber, collected in self-sealing polythene bags, labelled and immediately placed on ice until further analyses. In the laboratory, the projected leaf area of the marked leaves in Li-COR 6400XT chamber was determined (Win Rhizo software, Regent Instruments Inc., Québec City, Canada) and gas exchange measurements were recalculated accordingly.

The $A_{\text{net}}-C_i$ curves were then fit using the biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.* (1980), in order to obtain kinetic coefficients associated with rates of maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) and electron transport (J_{max} ; $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) as outlined in Chapter 2 (Pathare *et al.*, 2017). While deriving the rates of V_{cmax} and J_{max} , I used a fixed mesophyll conductance value of 0.2 $\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \text{bar}^{-1}$ for the evergreen herbaceous species (Flexas *et al.*, 2008) to reflect the finite characteristics of this trait. The temperature responses of V_{cmax} and J_{max} were carried out previously in Chapter 2 (see section 2.6.4). The resulting kinetic constants derived by fitting the modified Arrhenius function for V_{cmax} were used in the fitacis function in plant ecophys package (Duursma, 2015). From V_{cmax} and corresponding leaf N content, I calculated the apparent fraction of N allocated to the active state Rubisco enzyme ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$), assuming a composition of 16.67% N, eight active sites and a k_{cat} of 3.3 for the enzyme (Evans, 1989). $f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$ indicates the carboxylation per unit leaf N and the possibility of protein specific down-regulation (Rogers & Ellsworth, 2002).

4.3.3 Chemical and morphological traits

I harvested all the pots 70 days after transplanting. During the harvesting, each plant species was separated into leaves (green and senescent), stems and roots. Root system was carefully washed of soil particles. While doing so, roots were placed in a sieved tray (4 mm) to avoid loss of fine roots. Root system was oven dried for two days at 60 °C. Green leaves were scanned using leaf area meter LI-3100 (Li-Cor, Lincoln, NE, USA) to determine the leaf area, oven dried for two days at 60 °C and weighed to obtain leaf area ratio (LAR). LAR ($\text{cm}^2 \text{g}^{-1}$) was expressed as total leaf area divided by total plant biomass (Funk, 2008). Above-ground and below-ground samples, oven dried at 60 °C for 48 hours, were weighed to obtain root and shoot biomass which were expressed on g pot^{-1} basis. Leaves used for gas exchange measurements were further processed for C, N and P content analyses. In particular, leaves were oven dried, finely ground and then processed for C and N content analyses using (Elementar Vario Micro CHNS analyser, Hanau, Germany). Green leaf N content was expressed on area basis as N_{area} (g m^{-2}). N_{area} was calculated as N_{mass} (g g^{-1}) x Leaf mass per area (g m^{-2}). Leaf P content was determined using an X-ray fluorescence spectrometer which works on the principle of excitation of inner orbital electrons by an X-ray radiation source (Reidinger *et al.*, 2012). Dried plant material was finely ground, pressed into pellets and analysed by exposing the pellets to X-rays for 30s. Certified reference materials from different plant species were used for calibration. Leaf P content was expressed on area basis as P_{area} (g m^{-2}).

4.3.4 Statistical analysis

Statistical analyses were performed using the R software (v3.2.2, R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria). The experiment consisted of two aCO₂ chambers and two eCO₂ chambers and hence the true number of replicates was two for each of the two levels of CO₂ treatments. A split-plot ANOVA was performed with CO₂ treatment (aCO₂ vs. eCO₂) as whole-plot factor and plant species as a split-plot factor. CO₂ chamber number and block number were included in the random effects part of the model. Appropriate tests were conducted to check the data for normality and equal variances and wherever necessary, log or square root transformations were used to improve the homoscedasticity of data. Linear mixed-effects models were used to test for the main effects of CO₂ and plant functional type (package nlme in R, Pinheiro *et al.*, 2016). For

all the parameters measured in this experiment, I used the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure for the number of ANOVA tests I did to control the false discovery rate (Benjamini & Hochberg, 1995). Based on this procedure, values of $P \leq 0.041$ were identified as critical. However, values of $P \leq 0.1$ were considered as marginally significant to avoid false negatives. Student's *t*-test was used for testing the effect of CO₂ treatment on measurement variables of individual species wherein $P < 0.05$ was considered as statistically significant. I expressed the effect of eCO₂ on photosynthetic variables of each species as percent change, calculated as $\text{CO}_2 \text{ effect} = [(\text{mean at eCO}_2 - \text{mean at aCO}_2) / (\text{mean at aCO}_2)] \times 100$.

Table 4.1 Results of mixed level split-plot ANOVA with CO₂ and plant species as main effects for net photosynthesis in respective growth CO₂ levels (A_{net}), net photosynthesis at a common CO₂ level ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$), maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport rates (J_{max}), leaf nutrient content on area basis (N_{area} and P_{area}), fraction of N allocated to Rubisco ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) morphological traits (total leaf dry weight, leaf area ratio and biomass).

Critical P -value identified through the Benjamini-Hochberg procedure is 0.04. Numerator and denominator degrees of freedom (df) are indicated in parenthesis next to the main and interaction effects.

Source of variation									
Variable	CO ₂			Species			CO ₂ x Species		
	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value	df	F -value	P -value
A_{net}	1,2	1.33	0.368	3,11	11.13	0.021	3,11	25.6	0.005
g_s	1,2	5.49	0.144	3,11	36.92	0.007	3,11	14.1	0.028
C_i	1,2	55.02	0.018	3,11	20.04	0.017	3,11	5.5	0.097
$A_{\text{net-Ca}}$	1,2	4.20	0.177	3,11	8.83	0.031	3,11	22.1	0.006
$V_{\text{cmax-25}}$	1,2	4.27	0.175	3,11	6.79	0.048	3,11	19.8	0.007
$J_{\text{max-25}}$	1,2	0.65	0.504	3,11	6.88	0.047	3,11	20.9	0.007
N_{area}	1,2	0.4	0.583	3,11	15.4	0.021	3,11	11.8	0.030
$f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$	1, 2	9.8	0.110	3,11	5.6	0.065	3,11	55.8	0.001
P_{area}	1,2	34.8	0.028	3,11	24.9	0.013	3,11	15.7	0.024
Total leaf biomass	1,2	2.14	0.281	3,11	30.84	<0.001	3,11	6.2	0.009
LAR	1,2	0.03	0.876	3,11	19.31	<0.001	3,11	13.9	<0.001
LMA	1,2	17.27	0.053	3,11	84.48	<0.001	3,11	3.6	0.024
Shoot biomass	1,2	3.31	0.210	3,11	136.32	<0.001	3,11	3.5	0.050
Root biomass	1,2	9.31	0.120	3,11	28.13	<0.001	3,11	11.2	0.001
Total biomass	1,2	12.17	0.073	3,11	114.70	<0.001	3,11	8.2	0.003

4.4 Results

4.4.1 Effects of CO₂ treatment on photosynthetic rates and stomatal conductance

The CO₂ enrichment of ambient + 150 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ did not have a significant overall effect on net photosynthetic rates across the functional groups ($P > 0.1$, Table 4.1). However, the species differed in their responses to eCO₂ for most of the variables associated with photosynthesis. The ANOVA indicated a significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on A_{net} ($P = 0.005$, Table 4.1). Photosynthetic rates increased significantly by 100% and 43% in *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* respectively (t -test, $P < 0.01$, Fig.4.1a), whereas decreased significantly by 56% (t -test, $P = 0.02$, Fig.4.1a) or remained unchanged for *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*, respectively. There was a significant species effect ($P = 0.021$, Table 4.1) as greater average A_{net} values were reported for *N. neesiana* followed by *L. purpurascens*, *S. madagascariensis* and *M. stipoides*. The average values of A_{net} reported in the current study for *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens* ($8.5 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $12 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) were comparable to the average values reported previously in the field study at the EucFACE ($9.4 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and $12.5 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively; see Pathare *et al.* 2017 and Chapter 2). However, *S. madagascariensis*, showed lower average values of A_{net} under eCO₂ in the current study ($10 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) compared to the field conditions ($18.5 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$; see Pathare *et al.* 2017 and Chapter 2). In summary, lack of eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* observed in this study was an indicative of the downward adjustment in photosynthetic capacities. Hence, I further analyzed the parameters associated with photosynthetic capacity for evidence of down-regulation under eCO₂.

Changes in stomatal conductance (g_s) in response to eCO₂ is an important factor affecting photosynthetic responses. Hence, I further analysed the effects of CO₂ treatment on g_s in the C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs (Fig. 4.1b). There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on g_s across the four species ($P = 0.144$, Table 4.1). However, there was a statistically significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on g_s ($P = 0.028$, Table 4.1). In particular, g_s decreased significantly under eCO₂, but only in *L. purpurascens* (-80%, t -test, $P < 0.001$, Fig. 4.1b), whereas, g_s increased significantly in *M. stipoides* under eCO₂ (+46%, t -test, $P < 0.001$, Fig. 4.1b) and remained unchanged in *N. neesiana* and *S. madagascariensis*

(Fig. 4.1b). Species also differed significantly in terms of g_s across the CO₂ treatments ($P = 0.007$, Table 4.1). Highest average g_s was reported for *N. neesiana*, followed by *S. madagascariensis*, *L. purpurascens* and *M. stipoides*. The volumetric soil water content did not respond to eCO₂ treatment (Fig. S4.1), thus suggesting a lack of soil water savings.

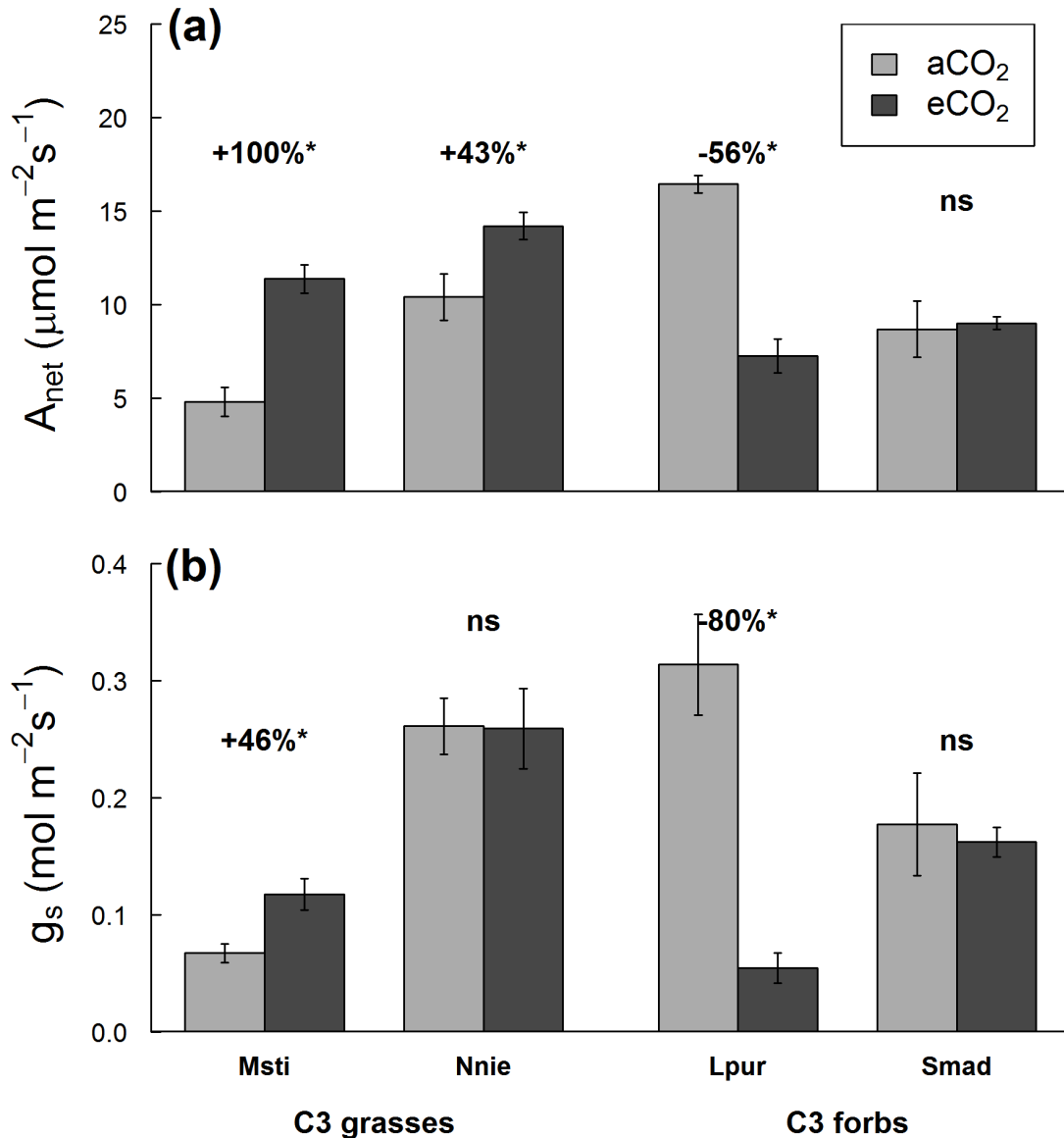


Fig. 4.1 Effects of CO₂ treatment on (a) net photosynthetic rates on area basis (A_{net}) and (b) stomatal conductance (g_s) in two C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and two C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by '*' when $P \leq 0.05$ and 'ns' when $P > 0.1$.

4.4.2 Effects of CO₂ treatment on photosynthetic capacity

Photosynthesis measured at common CO₂ levels ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$) can be compared to test for changes in photosynthetic capacity in response to growth at eCO₂. The CO₂ treatment had no significant effect on $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ ($P = 0.17$, Table 4.1), but showed a significant CO₂ x species interaction effect ($P = 0.006$, Table 4.1). $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ increased significantly by 62% (t -test, $P = 0.01$, Fig.4.2a) and non-significantly by 18% (t -test, $P > 0.1$, Fig.4.2a) in *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* respectively. In case of the C₃ forbs, $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$ decreased by 69% in response to eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* (t -test, $P < 0.024$, Fig.4.2a) and by 28% in *S. madagascariensis* (t -test, $P < 0.03$, Fig.4.2a).

The biochemical parameter, V_{cmax} , did not show a significant CO₂ treatment effect ($P = 0.17$, Table 4.1). However, there was a highly significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on V_{cmax} ($P = 0.007$, Table 4.1). V_{cmax} increased significantly by 37% under eCO₂ (t -test, $P < 0.01$, Fig.4.2b) in *M. stipoides* and remained unchanged in *N. neesiana*. In case of the two C₃ forbs, V_{cmax} decreased significantly by 57% and 33% under eCO₂ (t -test, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 4.2b) in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively. Average values of V_{cmax} reported in the current study for *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens* (50 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and 60 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) were comparable to the average values reported previously in the field study at the EucFACE (50.5 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and 67 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively; see Pathare *et al.* 2017 and Chapter 2). However, *S. madagascariensis*, showed lower average values of V_{cmax} under eCO₂ in the current study (35 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$) compared to field conditions (100 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$).

Similar responses to eCO₂ were observed for J_{max} . There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on J_{max} across the functional groups ($P = 0.50$, Table 4.1). However, there was a significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on J_{max} ($P = 0.007$, Table 4.1). J_{max} increased significantly by 58% under eCO₂ (t -test, $P < 0.01$, Fig. 4.2c) in *M. stipoides* and remained unchanged in *N. neesiana*. In case of the two C₃ forbs, V_{cmax} decreased significantly by 48% and 29% under eCO₂ (t -test, $P < 0.02$, Fig. 4.2c) in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively. Average values of J_{max} reported in the current study for *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens* (80 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ and 110 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ respectively) were comparable to the average values reported in the field study at the EucFACE (85 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$).

$^2 \text{ s}^{-1}$ and $100 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ respectively; see Pathare *et al.* 2017 and Chapter 2). However, *S. madagascariensis*, showed lower average values of J_{max} under $e\text{CO}_2$ in the current study ($75 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$) compared to field conditions ($110 \mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$). In summary, in the current study measures of photosynthetic capacity, that is, $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$, V_{cmax} and J_{max} , were reduced significantly under $e\text{CO}_2$ but only in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*. There was a marginally significant species ($P < 0.1$, Table 4.1) on the variables associated with photosynthetic capacities as highest values for $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$, V_{cmax} and J_{max} were observed in *N. neesiana* followed by *L. purpurascens*, *M. stipoides* and *S. madagascariensis*. Furthermore, compared to field conditions, parameters associated with photosynthetic capacity (V_{cmax} and J_{max}) were lower in the glasshouse study especially for *S. madagascariensis*. This lower photosynthetic capacity in *S. madagascariensis* reported in the glasshouse study could be related to greater root restrictions in pots and greater competition for resources due to four *S. madagascariensis* individuals per pot.

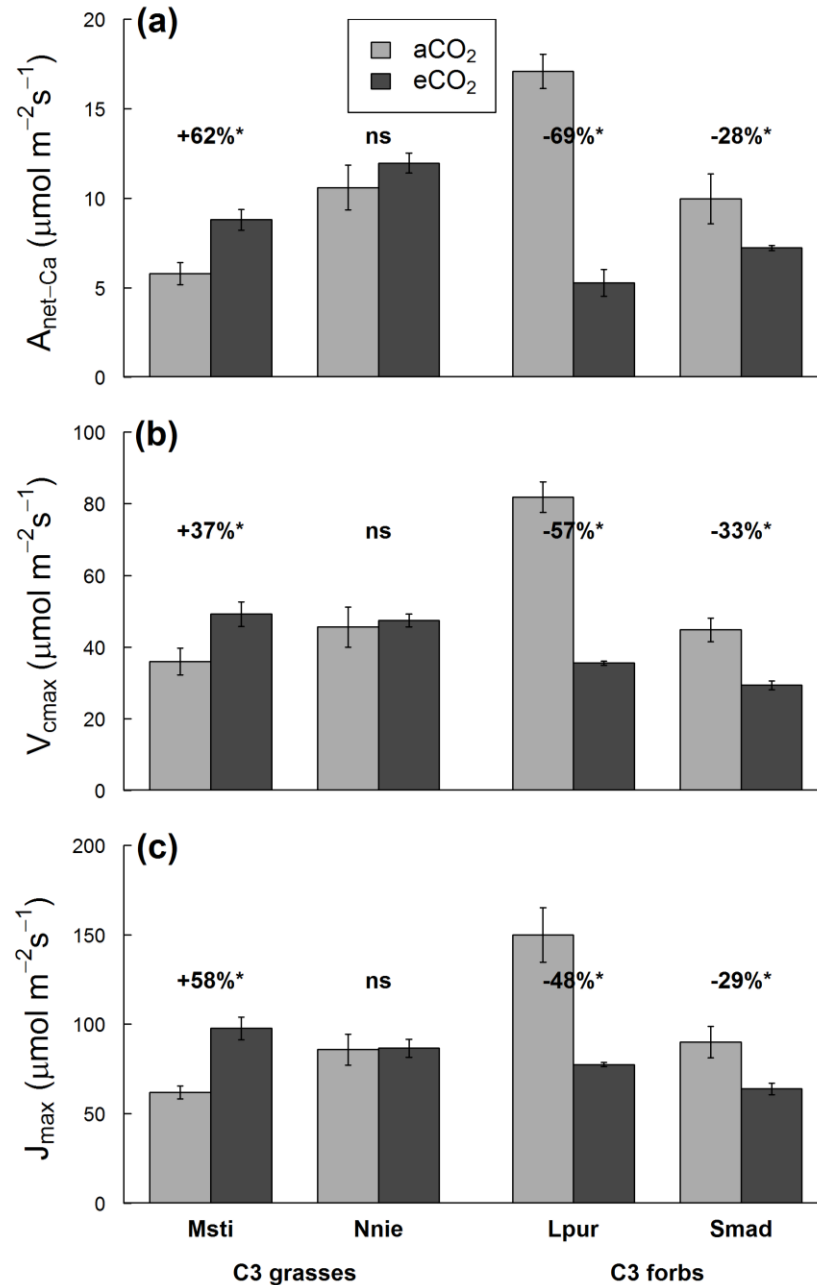


Fig. 4.2 Effects of eCO₂ on parameters associated with photosynthetic capacity.

Effects of CO₂ treatment on (a) net photosynthetic rates on area basis at common CO₂ levels ($A_{\text{net-Ca}}$), (b) maximum carboxylation rates (V_{cmax}) and (c) maximum electron transport rates (J_{max}) in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad). Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by ‘*’ when $P \leq 0.05$ and ‘ns’ when $P > 0.1$.

4.4.3 Effects of CO₂ treatment on leaf N content, N allocation to Rubisco and leaf P content

To gain perspective on observed photosynthetic capacity responses to eCO₂, I examined the leaf N content and N allocation to Rubisco ($f_{N-Rubisco}$) in the four species (Fig. 4.3). Though there was no significant CO₂ treatment effect on N content (N_{area}) across the species ($P = 0.58$ – 0.1 , Table 4.1), a significant CO₂ x species interaction effect was observed ($P = 0.03$, Table 4.1). There was 27% and 22% decrease in N_{area} under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* respectively (t -test, $P < 0.02$, Fig.4.3a), whereas N_{area} increased by 94 % in *L. purpurascens* (t -test, $P < 0.01$, Fig.4.3a) but remained unchanged in *S. madagascariensis*. Species also differed significantly in N content across the CO₂ treatments ($P < 0.02$, Table 4.1), with highest N_{area} observed in *N. neesiana* followed by *M. stipoides*, *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* (Fig. 4.3a). Average values of N_{area} reported in the current study for *M. stipoides* (0.90 g m^{-2}) were comparable to the average values reported in the field study at the EucFACE (0.91 g m^{-2} ; see Pathare *et al.* 2017 and Chapter 2). However, *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis*, showed lower average values of N_{area} under eCO₂ in the current study (0.75 g m^{-2} and 0.6 g m^{-2} respectively) compared to field conditions (1.0 g m^{-2} and 1.1 g m^{-2} respectively).

There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ ($P = 0.11$, Table 4.1, Fig.4.3b) across the species. However, we observed a highly significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on $f_{N-Rubisco}$ ($P = 0.001$, Table 4.1). In particular, $f_{N-Rubisco}$ increased by 89% in *M. stipoides* but remained unchanged in *N. neesiana*. In case of two C₃ forbs, $f_{N-Rubisco}$ decreased by 78% and 27% in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively. Taken together, despite the significant decrease in N_{area} under eCO₂ in the two C₃ grasses, N allocation to Rubisco was maintained under eCO₂ conditions. This contrasts with the C₃ forbs, which showed decrease in allocation of N to Rubisco under eCO₂, despite the maintenance of total leaf N levels.

I further examined the effects of CO₂ treatment on leaf P content (P_{area}) for the four species. There was a statistically significant overall CO₂ treatment effect ($P = 0.028$, Table 4.1) and a CO₂ x species ($P = 0.024$, Table 4.1) effect on P_{area} . In particular, P_{area} decreased under eCO₂ by 69% and 62% in *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* respectively, but remained

unchanged in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* (Fig.4.4). Species also differed significantly in P_{area} across the CO_2 treatments. Average P_{area} was higher in the two grasses compared to the two forbs (Fig. 4.4).

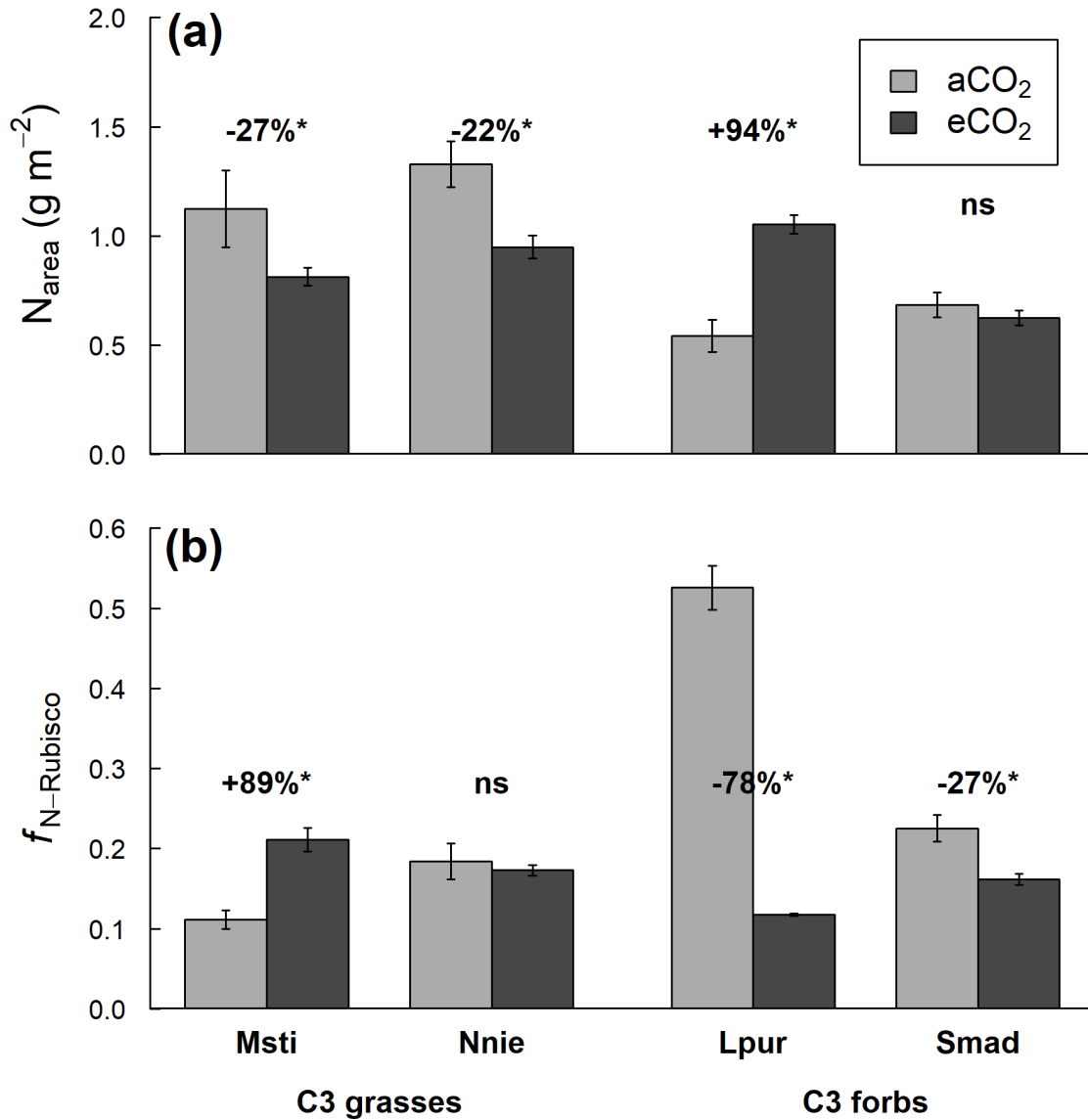


Fig. 4.3 Effects of CO₂ treatment on (a) N content on area basis (N_{area}) and (b) N allocation to Rubisco ($f_{\text{N-Rubisco}}$) in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by ‘*’ when $P \leq 0.05$ and ‘ns’ when $P > 0.1$.

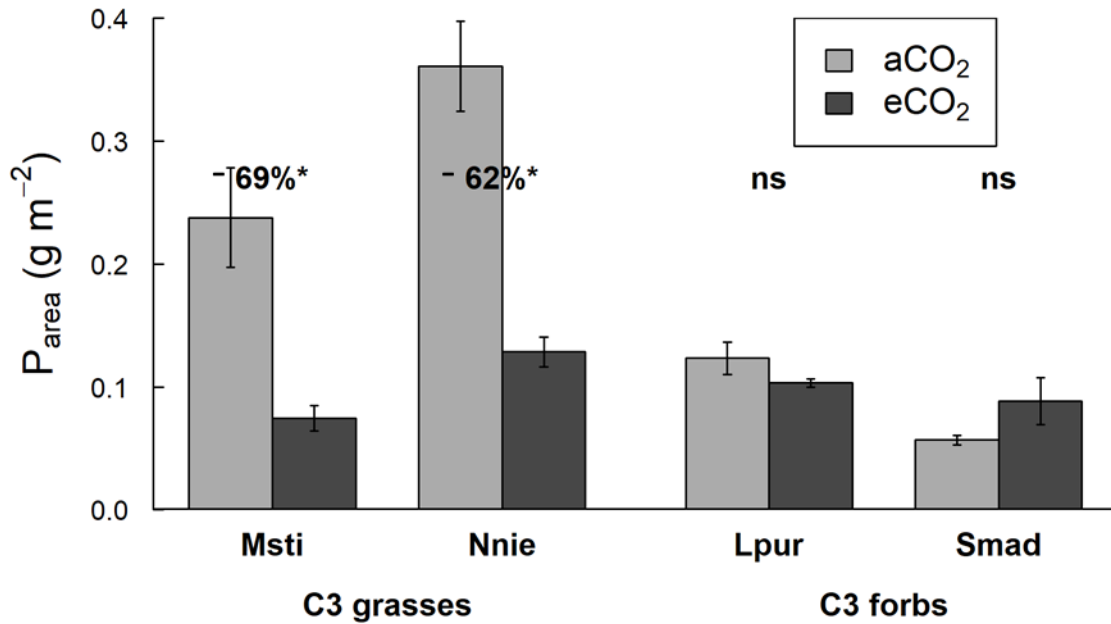


Fig. 4.4 Effects of CO₂ treatment on P content on area basis (P_{area}) in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by ‘*’ when $P \leq 0.05$ and ‘ns’ when $P > 0.1$.

4.4.4 Effects of eCO₂ on the morphological traits

We examined morphological traits associated with leaf area adjustments and biomass allocation patterns. A marginally significant CO₂ treatment effect was observed for LMA across the four species ($P = 0.053$, Table 4.1), whereas, a highly significant CO₂ x species interaction effect was observed for LMA ($P = 0.024$, Table 4.1). In particular, LMA decrease significantly under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* (-33%), *N. neesiana* (-28%) and *L. purpurascens* (-20%), but remained unchanged in *S. madagascariensis* (Fig. 5a). Species also differed significantly in terms of LMA across the CO₂ treatments ($P < 0.001$, Table 4.1). Average LMA was highest in *N. neesiana* followed by *M. stipoides*, *S. madagascariensis* and *L. purpurascens*. I further analysed the responses of leaf area ratio and leaf biomass to CO₂ treatment. There was no overall CO₂ treatment effect on leaf area ratio and total leaf biomass across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 4.1, Fig.4.5b, c). However, a significant CO₂ x species interaction effect was observed for both leaf area ratio and total leaf biomass ($P < 0.01$, Table 4.1). Leaf area ratio increased by 53% and 65% under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* respectively (t -test, $P < 0.03$, Fig. 4.5b), and decreased by 59% and 37% in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively (t -test, $P < 0.02$, Fig. 4.5b). Total leaf biomass remained unchanged in response to CO₂ treatment in both the C₃ grasses (Fig. 4.5c). However, there was a significant decrease of 82% and 40% in total leaf biomass under eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively (t -test, $P < 0.02$, Fig. 4.5c). Taken together, growth at eCO₂ resulted in significant decrease in leaf area ratio and total leaf biomass in the C₃ forbs, but not in the C₃ grasses.

The ANOVA did not indicate a significant CO₂ effect on shoot biomass and root biomass across the species ($P > 0.1$, Table 4.1). However, there was a marginally significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on shoot biomass ($P = 0.05$, Table 4.1), due to a decrease of 39% and 31% in shoot biomass under eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively (Fig. 4.6a). Furthermore, there was a highly significant CO₂ x species interaction effect on root biomass ($P = 0.001$, Table 4.1), as root biomass decrease by 45% and 82% in *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens* respectively (Fig. 4.6b). There was a marginally significant CO₂ effect on total biomass ($P = 0.075$, Table 4.1), but a highly

significant CO₂ x species interaction effect ($P = 0.003$, Table 4.1). Total biomass decreased by 68% and 19% in *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* respectively (Fig. 4.6c). Overall, growth at eCO₂ resulted in a significant decrease in total biomass in the C₃ forbs, whereas, total biomass of the two C₃ grasses remained unchanged.

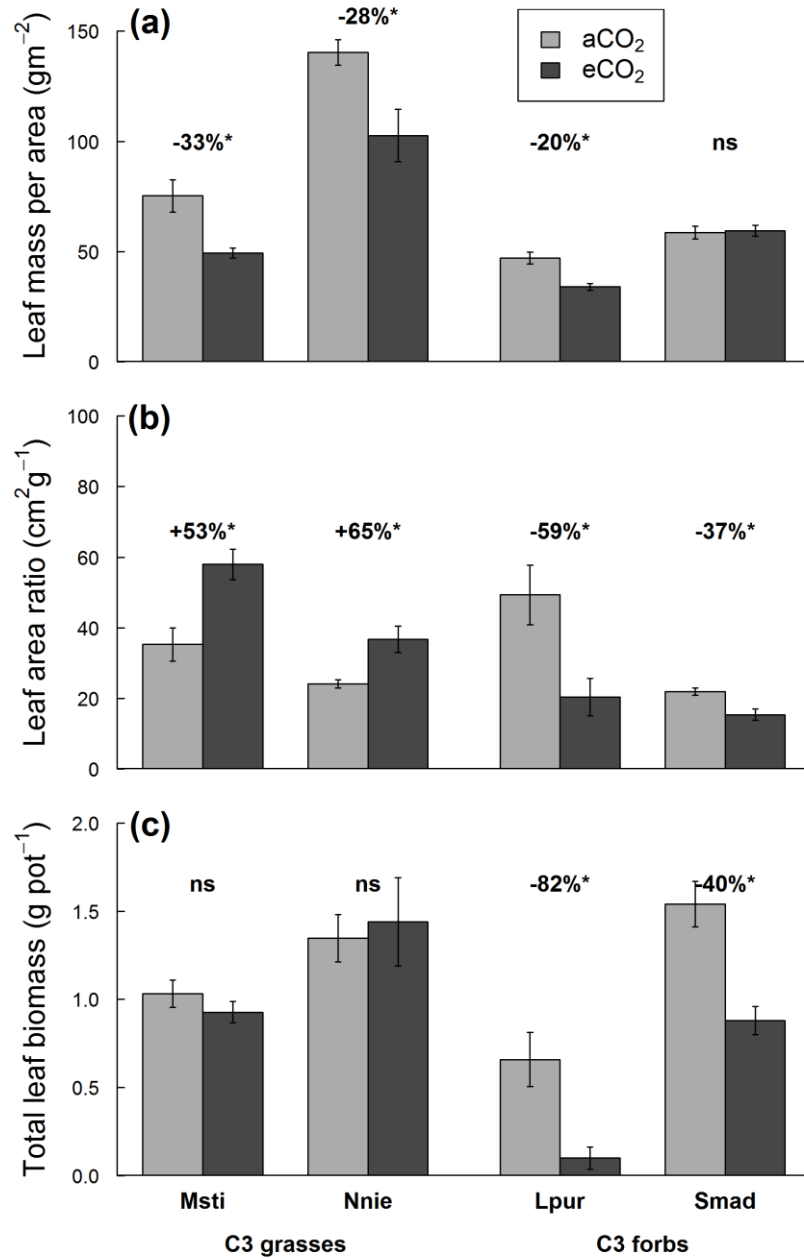


Fig. 4.5 Effects of CO₂ treatment on (a) leaf mass per area, (b) leaf area ratio and (c) total leaf dry biomass in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by '*' when $P \leq 0.05$ and 'ns' when $P > 0.1$.

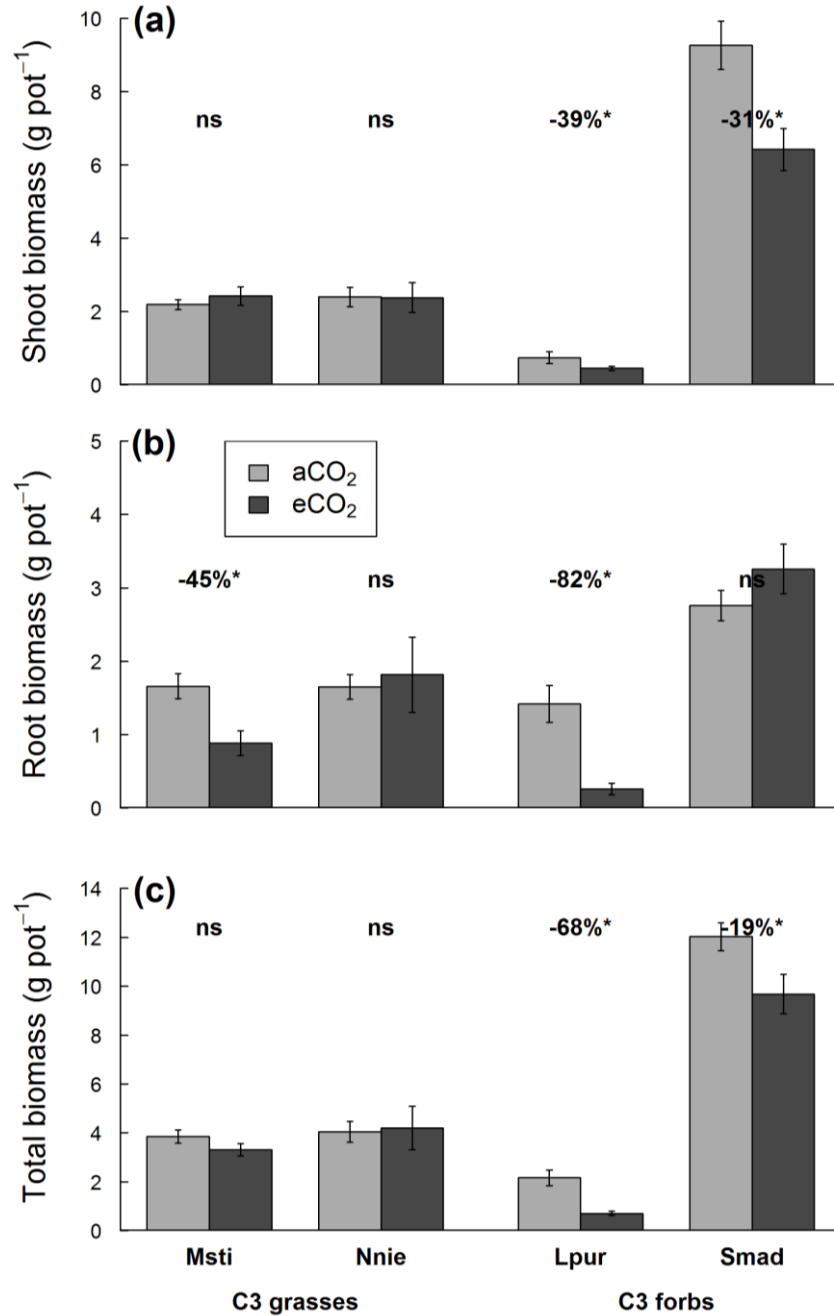


Fig. 4.6 Effects of CO₂ treatment on (a) shoot biomass, (b) root biomass and (c) total biomass in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by ‘*’ when $P \leq 0.05$ and ‘ns’ when $P > 0.1$.

4.5 Discussion

4.5.1 Photosynthetic capacity downregulation under eCO₂ is evident only in the C₃ forbs

Though eCO₂ is expected to increase photosynthetic rates in the C₃ species (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Long *et al.*, 2004), this expectation may not be always realized even under similar resource supply due to differences in the nutrient acquisition and allocation capacities among the plant species (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Lee *et al.*, 2011). In the current study, I observed strong differences in photosynthetic and biomass allocation responses to eCO₂ among four C₃ species growing under similar soil nutrients and unlimited water availability. Variables associated with photosynthetic capacity, stomatal conductance, $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$, V_{cmax} and J_{max} , showed a significant increase under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* and remained unchanged in *N. neesiana* (Fig. 4.2). This was accompanied by a significant stimulation of net photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ in the two C₃ grasses, that is, *M. stipoides* and *N. neesiana* (Fig.4.1). In contrast to the C₃ grasses, there was a significant decrease in $A_{\text{net-Ca}}$, V_{cmax} and J_{max} under eCO₂ in the two C₃ forbs, that is, *L. purpurascens* and *S. madagascariensis* (Fig. 4.2). Furthermore, there was a significant decrease in g_s under eCO₂ only in *L. purpurascens* (Fig. 4.1b). Decrease in photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ in *S. madagascariensis* correlated with the lack of stimulation in net photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ (Fig. 4.1). Whereas, for *L. purpurascens*, the decrease in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ correlate with the decrease in g_s . Based on these evidences I conclude that my first hypothesis- nutrient limited conditions will result in a decrease in the photosynthetic capacity in plants growing under eCO₂- was partially supported. Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ was observed only for the C₃ forbs. My second hypothesis-photosynthetic down-regulation would result in little or no enhancement of photosynthetic rates and biomass-was also partially supported. There was a lack of stimulation in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs, but not in the C₃ grasses. Also, total biomass of the two C₃ forbs decreased significantly under eCO₂, but remained unchanged in the C₃ grasses.

Though higher stimulation of photosynthetic rates and biomass under eCO₂ in the forbs, compared to the grasses, has been reported by earlier studies (Lee *et al.*, 2011, Reich *et al.*, 2001), some studies have found a significant photosynthetic capacity down-regulation

and lack of or even negative biomass responses under eCO₂ in the forbs (Ainsworth & Long, 2005, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Huxman & Smith, 2001, Inauen *et al.*, 2012). The results of my study are consistent with photosynthetic responses under eCO₂ reported for C₃ species from a nutrient-limited prairie grassland (Crous *et al.*, 2010) and for a C₃ grass and C₃ forbs from Mojave desert (Huxman & Smith, 2001) and with the biomass responses under eCO₂ reported for C₃ forbs from glacier fore-field (Inauen *et al.*, 2012). In particular, Crous *et al.*, (2010) observed a significant photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs, but not in the C₃ grasses, even under N sufficient conditions. This down-regulation response in the C₃ forbs under eCO₂ was attributed to the differences in functional traits, especially, lower root foraging capacities resulting in lower leaf N content. In the current study, I further examined whether differences in key functional traits, like overall leaf N content and changes in leaf N content and allocation under eCO₂, were responsible for photosynthetic capacity adjustments observed in the C₃ forbs.

4.5.2 Possible reasons for photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in the C₃ forbs

Photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ has often been related to plant N status and reduction in leaf N concentrations and N assimilation capacity under eCO₂, since N-containing amines are required for synthesizing and maintaining photosynthetic proteins (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Bloom *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). Many previous studies on the herbaceous species have observed dilution of leaf N concentrations under eCO₂, which has been largely attributed to lower soil N availability coupled with increased plant N demands, higher leaf carbohydrate content and decreased N uptake capacities under eCO₂ (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Crous *et al.*, 2010, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Feng *et al.*, 2015). I investigated whether dilution of leaf N content under eCO₂ was responsible for the photosynthetic capacity adjustments observed in the C₃ forbs. The species differed significantly in terms of leaf N responses to eCO₂. In particular, leaf N content increased significantly in *L. purpurascens* and remain unchanged in *S. madagascariensis* (Fig. 4.3a). Whereas, leaf N content decreased significantly under eCO₂ in the two C₃ grasses (Fig.4.3a), without any evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation (Fig. 4.2). Similar to leaf N content, leaf P content decreased

significantly under eCO₂ in the C₃ grasses, but remained unchanged in the two C₃ forbs (Fig. 4.4). Taken together, these results suggest that eCO₂-induced decrease in leaf N and P content was not the possible reason for photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ observed in the C₃ forbs. Also, despite the increase N_{area} under eCO₂ in *L. purpurascens* (+94%, Fig. 4.3), photosynthetic rates decreased significantly (-56%, Fig. 4.1a). This decrease in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ in *L. purourascens* could be attributed to eCO₂-induced decrease in g_s (Fig. 4.1b). In terms of whether leaf nutrient status under eCO₂ was responsible for the photosynthetic capacity adjustments observed under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs, but not grasses, a key finding is that leaf N per unit area was lower in forbs compared to grasses even though they were grown in the same planting medium (Fig. 4.3a). Furthermore, average leaf P content per unit area was also lower in both the C₃ forbs compared to the C₃ grasses (Fig.4.4). Lower overall leaf N and P content compared to the C₃ grasses, could be responsible for photosynthetic capacity adjustments observed under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs.

Causes for differential photosynthetic responses to eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs and C₃ grasses may also include differences in N allocation patterns. In particular, protein specific down-regulation of the Rubisco enzyme under eCO₂ can result in significant adjustments in photosynthetic capacity (Rogers & Ellsworth, 2002). To test the possibility of a protein specific down-regulation, I examined the apparent fraction of N allocated to Rubisco ($f_{N-Rubisco}$). Despite increase in leaf N levels in *L. purpurascens* and maintenance of leaf N in *S. madagascariensis* under eCO₂, there was a significant decrease in the amount of N allocated to Rubisco under eCO₂ in both the C₃ forbs (Fig.4.3). In contrast to the C₃ forbs, leaf N content decreased under eCO₂ in the C₃ grasses (Fig.4.3). However, $f_{N-Rubisco}$ increased under eCO₂ in the C₃ grasses thus indicating that C₃ grasses were able to increase their allocation of N to photosynthetic capacity. Taken together, the evidence suggests that protein specific down-regulation of the Rubisco enzyme under eCO₂ was the possible reason for photosynthetic down-regulation observed in the two C₃ forbs. This decrease in $f_{N-Rubisco}$ may provide N that can be re-allocated towards other protein-requiring systems (Drake *et al.*, 1997, Sage, 1994).

4.5.3 Biomass and allocation responses to eCO₂

Previous studies have reported increased C₃ forb biomass in response to eCO₂ (Polley *et al.*, 2003, Reich *et al.*, 2001, Teyssonneyre *et al.*, 2002). However, lack of response (Dijkstra *et al.*, 2010, Polley *et al.*, 2012a) or even reduced biomass and relative abundance under eCO₂ in the forbs has also been reported (Niklaus & Körner, 2004, Zavaleta *et al.*, 2003). In the current study, the C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs varied significantly in overall biomass as well as biomass allocation responses to eCO₂. Specifically, leaf area ratio and leaf biomass decreased significantly under eCO₂ in the two C₃ forbs (Fig.4.5). In contrast, there was a significant decrease in leaf mass per area and increase in leaf area ratio under eCO₂ in the two C₃ grasses, which was accompanied by no change in the leaf biomass as well as total biomass (Fig.4.5 and Fig. 4.6). These results suggest that under eCO₂, adjustments in leaf area occur in the C₃ grasses which may help the plants in optimizing resource capture and use in response to changes in resource availability (Poorter *et al.*, 2012, Tilman & Wedin, 1991). In particular, decrease in LMA and increase in leaf area ratio without a corresponding increase in total leaf biomass indicates a decrease in leaf density or the production of thin leaves in the C₃ grasses under eCO₂. This decrease in LMA could also be responsible for decrease in leaf N as well as P content under eCO₂ especially in the two C₃ grasses (Fig. 4.3 and Fig. 4.4). Since, the Rubisco enzyme represents a larger fraction of leaf N in thin leaves (Hassiotou *et al.*, 2010, Poorter & Evans, 1998), the decrease in LMA under eCO₂ in the current study suggests a strategy of the C₃ grasses to allocate leaf N efficiently to photosynthesis under eCO₂. In accordance with this I observed higher $f_{N-Rubisco}$ under eCO₂ in the grasses, despite decreases in N_{area} (Fig.4.3). Taken together, results from the current study suggest that differences in $f_{N-Rubisco}$ responses to eCO₂ coupled with changes in above-ground biomass allocation patterns via leaf area adjustments likely affected the CO₂ responsiveness in these species, in particular ability to maintain $f_{N-Rubisco}$ and avoid down-regulation by the grasses but not by the forbs. These differences in N allocation patterns and leaf area adjustments among different species have important implications for nitrogen-use efficiency and species responses to eCO₂ in nutrient-limited sites (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004).

Despite stimulation of photosynthetic rates and maintenance of photosynthetic capacity, there was no significant increase in total biomass in the C₃ grasses under eCO₂ (Fig. 4.6c). Such discrepancy between photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ has been observed previously for trees as well as herbaceous species (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Norby *et al.*, 2010, Reich & Hobbie, 2013, Sigurdsson *et al.*, 2013) and could be attributed to increase in carbohydrate availability exceeding the plants' capability to utilise it due to nutrient and inherent growth limitations (Kirschbaum, 2011). In contrast to the C₃ grasses, total biomass decreased significantly under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs (Fig. 4.6c) and was correlated with the lack of stimulation in photosynthetic rates (Fig. 4.1) and significant down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity (Fig. 4.2). Overall, results from the current study suggest that eCO₂ had a negative effect on biomass of the two C₃ forbs, but not grasses. A negative eCO₂ effect on biomass has rarely been reported, and if so, has been observed under low nutrient availability (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Zavaleta *et al.*, 2003). Under low soil nutrient availability, plants exposed to eCO₂ may allocate more biomass to roots in order to increase the root foraging capacity (Sigurdsson *et al.*, 2001, Suter *et al.*, 2002). For instance, Inauen *et al.*, 2012 observed a significant decrease in above-ground biomass under eCO₂ in glacier fore-field forb plants, which they indicated was a consequence of higher biomass partitioning to roots. In the current study, there was a significant decrease in shoot biomass under eCO₂ in both the C₃ forbs. However, I did not observe a concurrent increase in the root biomass under eCO₂ (Fig. 4.6b; Piñeiro *et al.*, unpublished data). Thus, there was no evidence of biomass partitioning in favour of root growth under eCO₂ in the C₃ forbs in current study.

4.5.4 Conclusions

In summary, the main goal of my experiment was to examine the differential photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ in the dominant C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs growing under similar nutrient availability and unlimited water inputs. The results suggest that magnitude of eCO₂ effect on photosynthesis and hence biomass accumulation varied among the species. Photosynthetic capacity and total biomass decreased in the C₃ forbs under eCO₂, but were maintained in the C₃ grasses. Lower leaf N content and inability to maintain allocation of N to Rubisco may be responsible for decrease in photosynthetic

capacity and biomass in the two C₃ forbs under eCO₂, as was found by Crous *et al.* (2010) previously. Such differences in photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂, between the C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs, may lead to less diverse herbaceous communities, possibly dominated by grasses.

4.6 Supplementary information

4.6.1 Supplementary figures

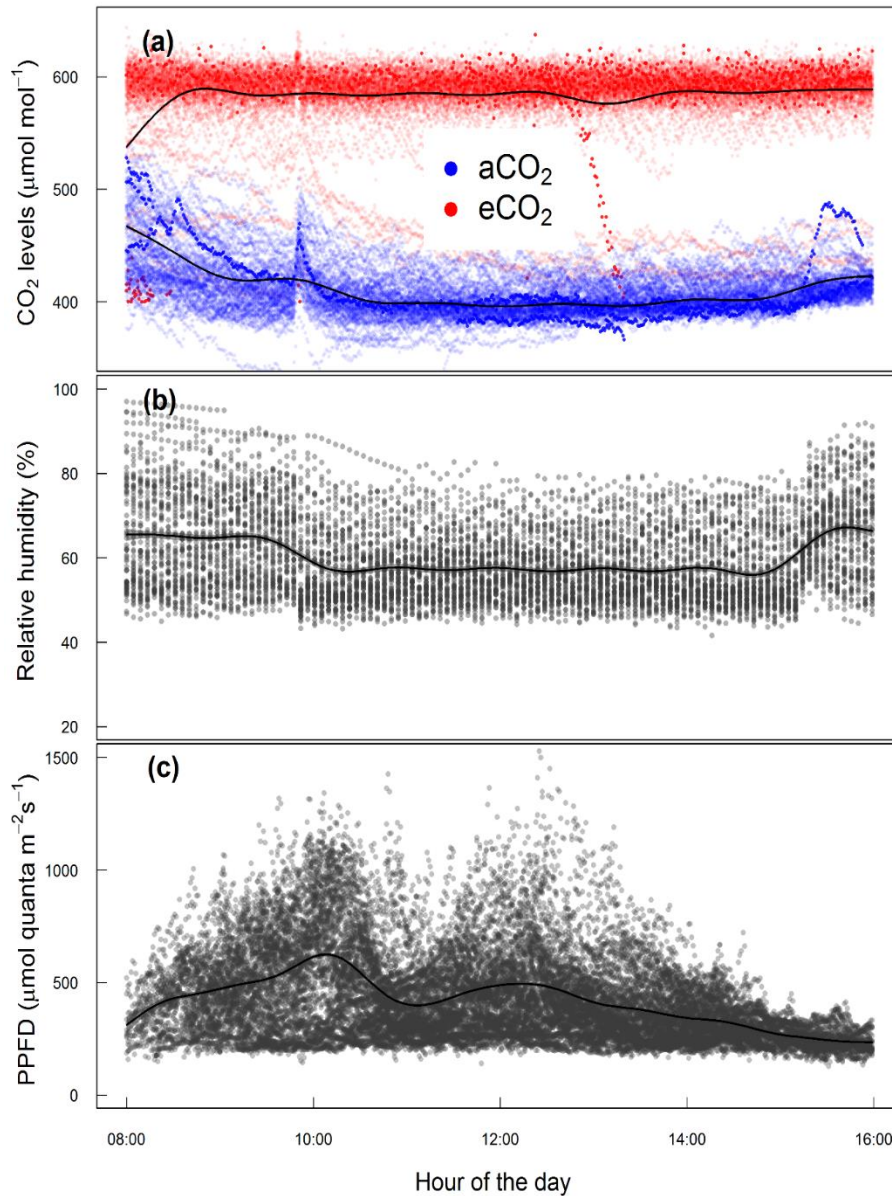


Fig. S 4.1 Glasshouse growth conditions for the daily time period from 8 am to 4 pm during the duration of experiment.

Panel (a) shows CO₂ levels under the ambient (aCO₂, blue dots) and elevated CO₂ (eCO₂, red dots) treatments; (b) shows relative humidity averaged across all the glasshouse chambers and (c) shows PPFD averaged across all the glasshouse chambers. Black solid lines indicate the gam fits with shaded confidence interval of 95%.

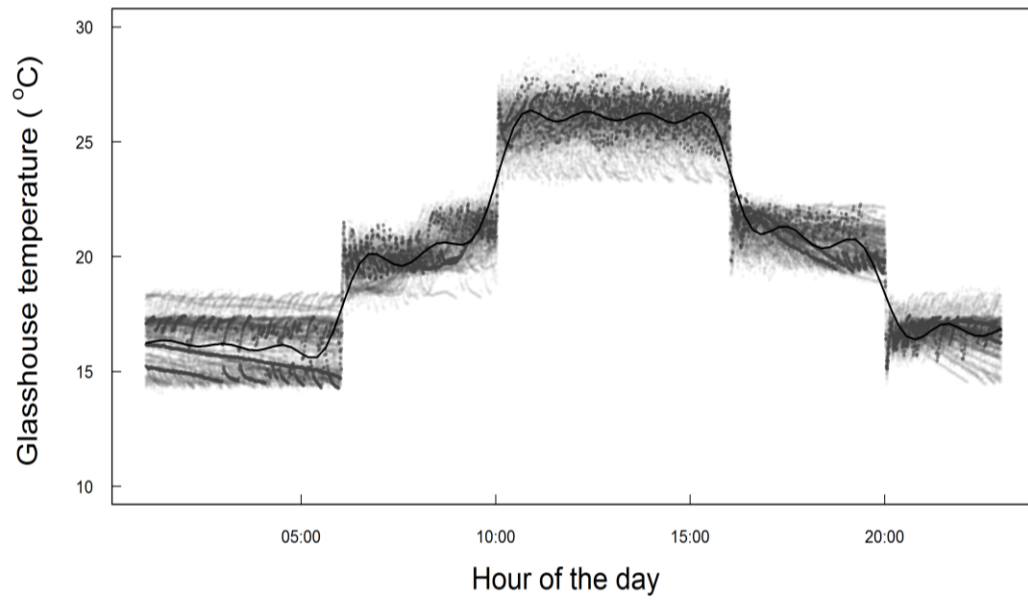


Fig. S 4.2 Daily glasshouse temperatures during the duration of experiment across all the four glasshouse chambers.

Black solid line indicates the gam fit with shaded confidence interval of 95%.

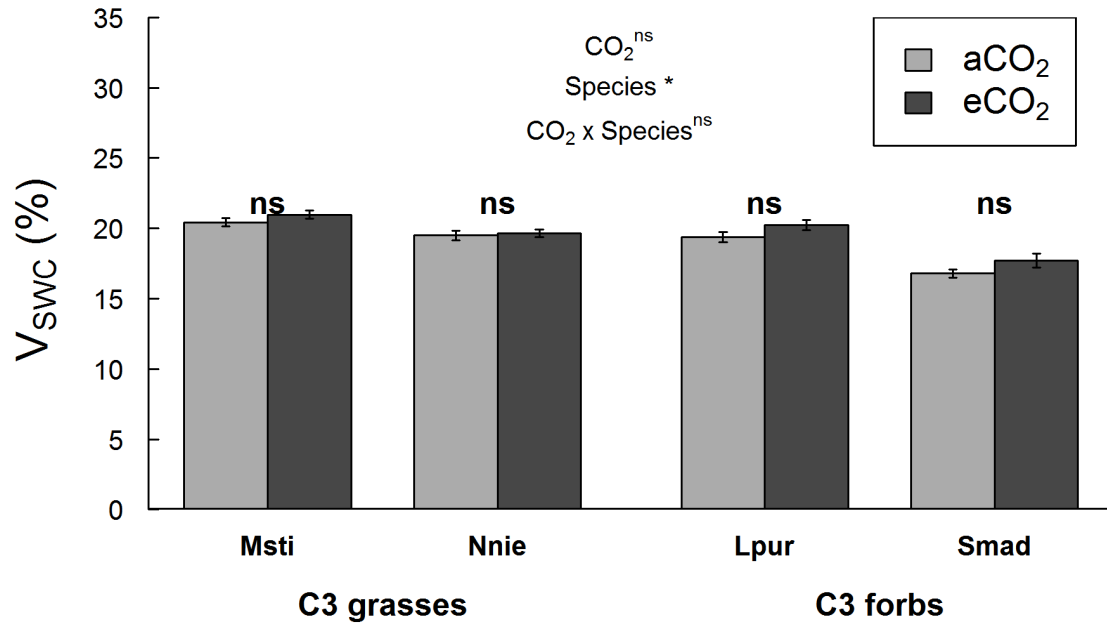


Fig. S 4.3 Effects of CO₂ treatment on volumetric soil water content (V_{swc}) in C₃ grasses (Msti and Nnie) and C₃ forbs (Lpur and Smad).

Grey bars indicate ambient CO₂ and black bars indicate elevated CO₂. The percentages above a pair of columns denote changes with eCO₂. Results of split plot ANOVA with CO₂ and species as main effects are shown in the panel. Within a species, differences in parameter between CO₂ treatments (paired *t*-test) are denoted by ‘*’ when $P \leq 0.05$ and ‘ns’ when $P > 0.1$.

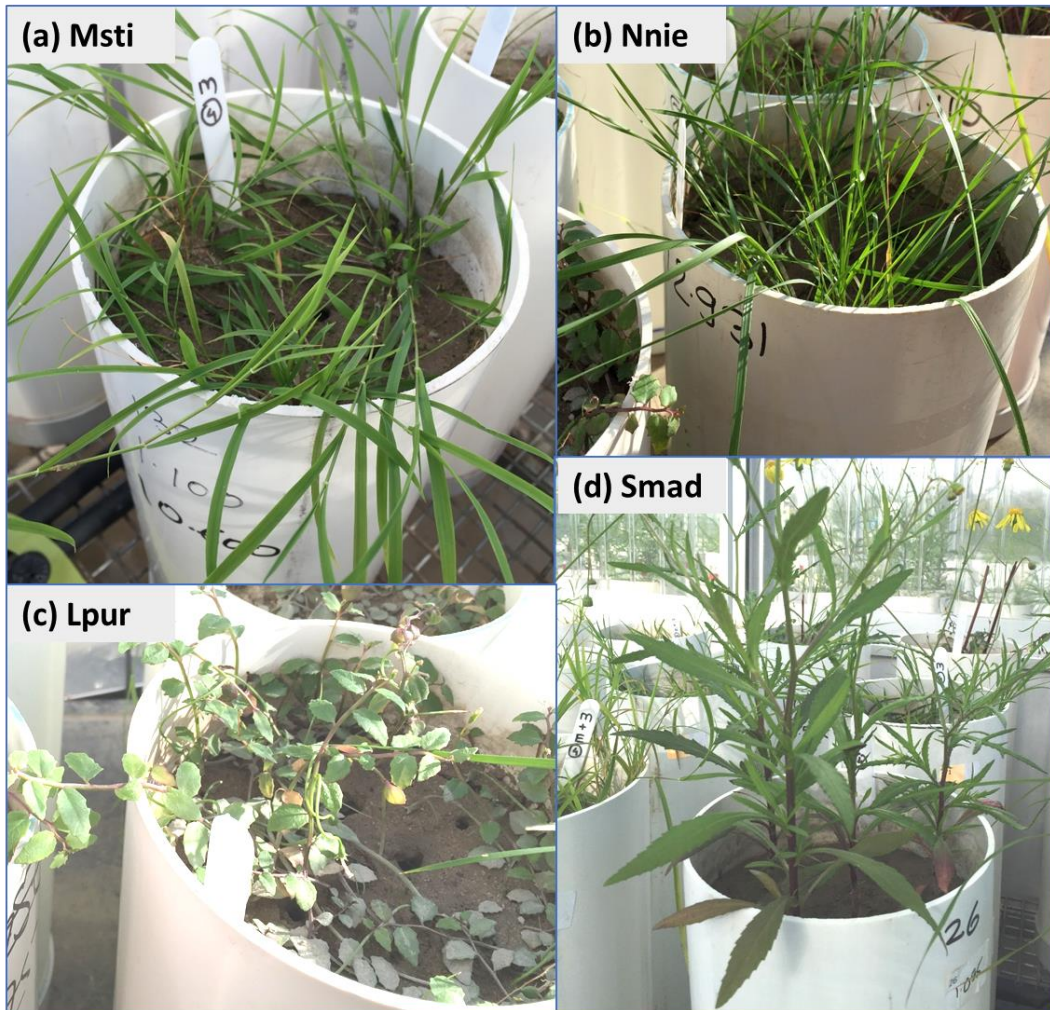


Image 4.1 Four herbaceous plant species growing in pots in the glasshouse during the current study.

(a) *Microlaena stipoides* Labill. (Msti) - a native C₃ grass (b) *Nasella neesiana* (Trin. & Rupr.) Barkworth (Nnie) - an invasive C₃ grass (c) *Lobelia purpurascens* R.Br (Lpur). - a native C₃ forb (d) *Senecio madagascariensis* Poir (Smad). - an invasive C₃ forb. Images were photographed by Ms. Varsha Pathare when the plants were 45 days old.

Chapter 5 : Synthesis

5.1 Background overview and project aims

Despite the large number of studies about photosynthetic and productivity responses to eCO₂, our ability to predict responses of terrestrial ecosystems to eCO₂ remains incomplete due to lack of studies in the warmer-climate ecosystems which includes the warm-temperate, sub-tropical and tropical ecosystems (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Leakey *et al.*, 2012). Consequently, expected impacts of eCO₂ on these warm ecosystems have been modelled or predicted based on findings from the well-studied cold temperate ecosystems (Hickler *et al.*, 2008, Leakey *et al.*, 2012, Norby *et al.*, 2016). The warmer ecosystems differ from the cold temperate ecosystems in important attributes beyond the obviously higher mean annual temperatures. These other differences include water availability, type of nutrient limitation and vegetation type, suggesting different responses to eCO₂ (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Hickler *et al.*, 2008). Furthermore, despite their importance for forest biodiversity and functioning, only few studies have addressed the eCO₂ effects on photosynthesis and biomass growth of the understory species and mostly focus on responses of the woody seedlings and/or shrubs (Dawes *et al.*, 2015, Hättenschwiler & Körner, 2000, Kim *et al.*, 2015), resulting in less knowledge about understory herbaceous species responses to eCO₂. The overall aim of this dissertation was to quantify the photosynthesis and productivity responses of an understory plant community from an ecosystem to eCO₂. In order to address this aim, I undertook a study of the evergreen C₃ herbaceous species from the understory of a *Eucalyptus* woodland. The climate of this grassy woodland ecosystem is warm-temperate to subtropical with a mean annual temperature of 17°C and a mean daily maximum temperature of 30°C during warmest month thus resulting in year round growth in the evergreen C₃ species. Furthermore, the woodland is characterised by seasonal water- limitation and low soil nutrient availability, particularly low P (Crous *et al.*, 2015). Consequently, this model grassy woodland ecosystem provided an opportunity to test the predictions of eCO₂ effects under water- and P-limited conditions. The three experimental chapters of this thesis (Chapter 2, 3 and 4) were designed to address the key predictions discussed in the following sections.

5.2 Key findings and general discussion

Detailed results and discussion of the findings have already been covered in each experimental chapter. In the following sections I highlight the key findings of each experimental chapter and discuss the implications of this study.

5.2.1 Elevated CO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement is a decreasing function of seasonal water availability

In Chapter 2, I investigated the effects of seasonal water availability on eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement in three C₃ herbaceous species growing at the EucFACE facility across the first three years of CO₂ fertilisation. Results demonstrate that eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement is a decreasing function of soil water availability, as highest proportional increase in A_{net} under eCO₂ was evident during the driest periods. Elevated CO₂ overcomes the higher stomatal limitations during water-limited periods by increasing C_i and thus leads to proportional increase in photosynthetic rates. Furthermore, eCO₂ did not result in decrease in g_s and increase in V_{SWC}, thus ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ was absent in this warm water-limited ecosystem. As a result, ‘water-savings effect’ was not responsible for higher eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement observed during water-limited periods.

One of the most consistent responses of plant species to eCO₂ is a decrease in stomatal conductance (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007, Xu *et al.*, 2016). However, in contrast to this general trend, I did not observe a decrease in stomatal conductance for the herbaceous species in the current study. The mechanism underlying lack of stomatal response to eCO₂ still remains to be clarified further (Xu *et al.*, 2016). Earlier studies (Jarvis & Davies 1998, Jarvis *et al.*, 1999) suggest that stomatal conductance response to CO₂ is a function of the photosynthetic capacity of plants and how close the realized rates of photosynthesis are to this maximum photosynthetic capacity. That is, stomatal conductance may respond to eCO₂ when photosynthetic rates are closer to the photosynthetic capacity than when they are not. In addition to seasonal variation in water availability, the mean daily maximum temperature of the *Eucalyptus* woodland also varies (18, 22, 27 and 29 °C for winter, autumn, spring and summer respectively). The biochemical model of Farquhar *et al.*,

(1980), based on the kinetic properties of Rubisco, suggests that an increase in A_{net} with an increase in the $[\text{CO}_2]$ will be greater at higher than lower temperatures. Hence, I also investigated whether seasonal variation in temperature affected the magnitude of eCO_2 -induced A_{net} enhancement. Results from chapter 2 indicate that temperature was not a significant predictor of eCO_2 -induced A_{net} enhancement (Chapter 2, Fig. S7).

5.2.2 Growth at eCO_2 causes down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in the C_3 herbaceous species

Though eCO_2 results in significant stimulation of photosynthetic rates, lower or lack of stimulation of A_{net} during some time points observed in Chapter 2 (Pathare *et al.*, 2017) provides preliminary evidence for photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in these species. Also, the absence of an eCO_2 effect on g_s (Chapter 2) suggests that photosynthetic capacity down-regulation must instead be related to the biochemistry of photosynthesis. Accordingly, in Chapter 3, I investigated the seasonal effects of eCO_2 on photosynthetic capacity of two dominant C_3 species to determine if there was down-regulation and the possible mechanisms involved. The two species, including a dominant C_3 grass (*M. stipoides*) and a dominant C_3 forb (*L. purpurascens*), were measured for six seasons (two years over each spring, summer and autumn seasons) in the second and third years of CO_2 enrichment at EucFACE. Results from Chapter 3 demonstrate that eCO_2 elicits down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in the dominant C_3 herbaceous species, especially during the peak growing season of spring. A decrease in V_{cmax} and J_{max} along with a lack of significant stimulation in A_{net} under eCO_2 was evident during one spring season in the C_3 grass and two spring seasons in the C_3 forb. For the summer and autumn periods, photosynthetic capacities of both the species were maintained under eCO_2 and there was an average 30% stimulation of A_{net} across the species.

Chapter 4 involved a glasshouse study designed to simulate the soil conditions at the EucFACE facility with well-watered conditions. In Chapter 4, I demonstrated that growth at eCO_2 significantly increases A_{net} in the C_3 grasses, but not C_3 forbs. Also, there was no ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO_2 in the glasshouse experiment (Fig. S4.3). The lack of significant stimulation of A_{net} under eCO_2 in the C_3 forbs coincided with biochemical indicators of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation. This down-regulation of

photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ observed in C₃ forbs was a result of inability to maintain the fraction of N allocated to photosynthesis. In contrast to forbs, photosynthetic capacity, fraction of N allocated to Rubisco and stimulation of A_{net} under eCO₂ was maintained in the C₃ grasses. Overall, based on key findings from Chapter 3 and 4 I conclude that the down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂ occurs in the C₃ species from a grassy woodland, though the seasons or C₃ grasses and C₃ forbs may differ in this regard.

It has been expected that photosynthetic capacity down-regulation under eCO₂ will be greater in the low N conditions compared to the high N conditions (Long *et al.*, 2004, Moore *et al.*, 1999) and some evidences support these expectations (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). However, some studies conducted in the N sufficient ecosystems (Inauen *et al.*, 2012) or N fertilized conditions (Crous *et al.*, 2010, Lee *et al.*, 2011, Ruiz-Vera *et al.*, 2017) have also reported a down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity under eCO₂. The current study has been conducted in a relatively N sufficient ecosystem (Crous *et al.*, 2015) compared to the cold-temperate ecosystem (Schulze *et al.*, 1994) and there was evidence of photosynthetic acclimation. In the field experiment, photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ was evident during the peak growing season of spring (Chapter 3), when photosynthetic acclimation under eCO₂ is less expected due to higher growth sink capacities of plants (Lewis *et al.*, 1996). Also, in the glasshouse study, photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ was evident only in C₃ forbs but not in the C₃ grasses, in spite of being grown under similar supply of soil nutrients and water (Chapter 4). Taken together, findings from the current study support the previous reports of photosynthetic down-regulation under eCO₂ even under sufficient N supply (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Lee *et al.*, 2011). The ability of plants to maintain biomass enhancement under eCO₂ largely depends on their ability to maintain photosynthetic capacities (Long *et al.*, 2004). If the photosynthetic capacity of plants is down-regulated under eCO₂, the ecosystem may become less responsive to eCO₂ and consequently sequester less C than it would without down-regulation (Luo *et al.*, 2003).

Although the results from current study suggest limited evidence for photosynthetic capacity adjustment with long-term eCO₂, the [CO₂] of ambient +150 ppm (\approx 550 ppm)

was used to address the effects of eCO₂ on the understory herbaceous species. However, with the rates of CO₂ emissions steadily increasing, (Peters *et al.*, 2012), values of CO₂ up to 1000 ppm have been considered as realistic experimental treatments for studying plant responses to higher [CO₂] (Franks *et al.*, 2013). However, at [CO₂] greater than 550 ppm, most of the C₃ plant species will be CO₂ saturated and operating in the asymptotic part of the A_{net}-C_i response curve and hence will be largely limited by RuBP regeneration capacity. This could result in a different pattern of acclimation of photosynthetic capacity compared to that observed at ambient +150 ppm [CO₂]. Thus, any further increase in atmospheric [CO₂] (> 550 ppm) may not result in increases in photosynthetic rates. Furthermore, though rise in atmospheric [CO₂] may cause competitive inhibition of oxygenation of Rubisco, this may not always be beneficial to the plants in terms of increase in photosynthetic rates. For instance, recent studies suggest photorespiration is important for nitrate assimilation (Bloom *et al.*, 2014) as well as P recycling in P-limited conditions (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2015). Thus, increase in atmospheric [CO₂] (> 550 ppm) will result in decrease in photorespiration and may further exacerbate N and P-limitation of photosynthesis and growth.

5.2.3 Elevated CO₂ does not increase biomass of the understory herbaceous species component from a water-limited ecosystem

To assess the effects of eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement on biomass responses of the herbaceous species, I investigated the above-ground biomass of the total grasses and forbs in the EucFACE experiment (Chapter 3) and the total biomass of C₃ grasses and forbs in the glasshouse experiment (Chapter 4). Results from EucFACE facility (Chapter 3) demonstrated a lack of significant CO₂ effect on the above-ground biomass of the herbaceous species. The EucFACE provides direct field insights into the effects of eCO₂ on the above-ground biomass responses of herbaceous species growing in a warm-temperate ecosystem. However, being located in a natural and undisturbed ecosystem, it was difficult to isolate the root biomass of the dominant species. Consequently, a glasshouse study was undertaken to study the effects of eCO₂ on the root biomass response of the dominant species along with other photosynthetic and above-ground traits. Results like the EucFACE were reported for total biomass of herbaceous plants in the glasshouse

study (Chapter 4). Here total biomass of C₃ grasses remained unchanged under eCO₂, whilst there was a significant decrease in total biomass of C₃ forbs in eCO₂ relative to aCO₂ (Chapter 4). The glasshouse study provided some evidence that the below-ground biomass of the dominant herbaceous species from a warm-temperate ecosystem may not increase under eCO₂. Further work in the field is needed to corroborate this evidence. It has been expected that C₃ species growing in the warm, water-limited ecosystems will have a greater potential to respond positively to eCO₂ in terms of relative increase in biomass, compared to the species from cold temperate ecosystems (Morgan *et al.*, 2011, Hickler *et al.*, 2008, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Long, 1991). However, results for the herbaceous species from a warm water-limited grassy woodland ecosystem in the current study contrast above expectations as there was a lack of relative biomass stimulation under eCO₂.

Lack of an eCO₂-induced biomass enhancement observed previously in the understory species has been attributed to increases in overstory biomass and leaf area leading to decreases in understory light availability (Bandeff *et al.*, 2006, Kim *et al.*, 2015). However, this could not be a possible explanation for lack of eCO₂-induced biomass enhancement in understory species in the current study, because eCO₂ did not cause increase in leaf area index or other components of above-ground biomass in the overstory trees at the site (Duursma *et al.*, 2016, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017). Lack of a biomass response to eCO₂ in the current study could be explained by lack of eCO₂-induced 'water-savings effect' and low soil nutrient availability. Previous studies, both modelling and empirical, based on water-limited ecosystems suggest that, eCO₂-induced soil water savings can eliminate plant water limitation and enhance soil nutrient availability thus supporting relatively greater biomass under eCO₂ compared to aCO₂ (Fatichi *et al.*, 2014, Grünzweig & Körner, 2003, Morgan *et al.*, 2011). However, in the current study there was a lack of eCO₂-induced 'water-savings effect' which may have resulted in lack of relative increase in above-ground biomass (Chapter 3). Another possibility is that lack of biomass stimulation under eCO₂ is a consequence of limitation by some soil nutrient (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Reich & Hobbie, 2013). Previous studies, particularly from the cold-temperate ecosystems, suggest N as an important nutrient affecting plant photosynthesis and biomass responses to eCO₂ (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004, Reich *et al.*, 2006a). The grassy woodland

ecosystem in the current study is relatively N sufficient compared to the cold temperate ecosystems (Crous *et al.*, 2015, Schulze *et al.*, 1994). The soil of grassy woodland ecosystem in the current study is strongly P-limited (Crous *et al.*, 2015). Earlier studies indicate the potential for limited photosynthesis and productivity responses to eCO₂ under low P availability (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013, Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017). Also, the average N: P ratio of ≈ 30 reported for the dominant understory species in the current study indicates that these species are P-limited (Güsewell, 2004). Regardless of the exact cause, lack of relative increase in biomass under eCO₂ observed for the understory herbaceous species from a warm, water-limited woodland, suggests a limited capacity of these species to respond to eCO₂. As root biomass data for the herbaceous understory species at EucFACE is not available for the time points when above-ground biomass harvest was performed, I do not know if below-ground productivity of the understory species was influenced by eCO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement. However, lack of root biomass stimulation under eCO₂ observed in the glasshouse experiment (Chapter 4) provides some evidence about the possible lack of root biomass stimulation due to eCO₂ at EucFACE as well.

Stimulation of photosynthesis under eCO₂ does not always translate into stimulation of plant growth and biomass (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2017, Norby *et al.*, 2010, Reich & Hobbie, 2013, Sigurdsson *et al.*, 2013). In my study, though the magnitude of eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement varied with time points (Chapter 2 and 3) and species (Chapter 3 and 4), the overall trend was towards higher photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ across the dominant C₃ herbaceous species. However, I did not observe relative stimulation of understory above-ground biomass (Chapter 3) as well as total biomass (Chapter 4) under eCO₂. These findings about lack of significant biomass stimulation under eCO₂, despite evidence of increases in photosynthetic rates, lead to the question about the fate of extra carbon assimilated under eCO₂ (Fatichi & Leuzinger, 2013, Fatichi *et al.*, 2014). Some of the possible pathways for extra C assimilated under eCO₂ include: increased plant and soil respiration (Adair *et al.*, 2011, Drake *et al.*, 2016), increased root exudates and export to mycorrhiza and other microbes (Cheng *et al.*, 2012, Phillips *et al.*, 2011, Phillips *et al.*, 2012) and increased root growth (Inauen *et al.*, 2012, Nie *et al.*, 2013).

5.2.4 Differences and similarities in field and glasshouse results

Two field experiments and one glasshouse experiment were conducted in the current study. Results from the field experiments varied from those of the glasshouse experiment for many measured parameters, particularly for the dominant species, *M. stipoides* and *L. purpurascens*. For instance, stomatal conductance for both the dominant species did not respond to eCO₂ in the field (Fig. 2.1). However, in the glasshouse experiment, stomatal conductance increased significantly under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* but decrease in *L. purpurascens* (Fig. 4.1). Furthermore, at the field level there was an overall increase in photosynthetic rates under eCO₂ across the seasons in *L. purpurascens* (Fig. 2.1). Photosynthetic rates of *L. purpurascens* did not increase in response to eCO₂ in the glasshouse experiment (Fig. 4.6). Leaf N content showed significant seasonal variation in response to eCO₂ in the field for both the species (Fig. 3.3 and 3.5). Leaf P content did not respond to eCO₂ in both the species (Fig. 3.5). However, in the glasshouse experiment, leaf N and P content decreased under eCO₂ in *M. stipoides* (Fig. 4.3 and 4.4), whereas, for *L. purpurascens* leaf N increased and leaf P remained unchanged in response to eCO₂. Similar to leaf N, $f_{N-Rubisco}$ showed seasonal variation in responses to eCO₂ for both the species (Fig. 3.4). Whereas, in the glasshouse experiment $f_{N-Rubisco}$ increased in *M. stipoides* and decreased in *L. purpurascens* (Fig. 4.3). Furthermore, total above-ground biomass for grasses and forbs did not respond to eCO₂ in the field (Fig. 3.7). In the glasshouse, total biomass of *M. stipoides* remained unchanged under eCO₂, but decreased significantly in *L. purpurascens*. In sum, it can be difficult to replicate field conditions in the glasshouse, and hence difficult to compare results from field experiments to those obtained from glasshouse study, as in the latter case complex plant-environment interactions are eliminated. The glasshouse study was conducted only for one season with plants growing as monocultures under unlimited water supply, in contrast to the field study where water availability, light, temperature and competition for resources varied seasonally. Hence, plant-soil equilibrium over decades of growth in the field may not be well-replicated in the glasshouse and as a result the nutritional status of *M. stipoides* and its eCO₂ response was not matched in the glasshouse relative to the field site. Despite the differences between the field and glasshouse study, some common and important findings

from both the studies are- lack of ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ and no stimulation of biomass of the herbaceous species despite significant increases in photosynthetic rates.

5.3 Implications of the current study for the Australian ecosystems

An important goal of this thesis was to contribute towards the understanding of eCO₂ effects on the understory herbaceous species of grassy woodlands, which are important ecosystems that occupy a large area in Australia (Australian Government Department of Agriculture, Fisheries and Forestry, 2012). Native Australian species have not been extensively investigated in eCO₂ (Hovenden and Williams, 2010). A characteristic feature of the grassy woodlands is the co-existence of trees and herbaceous species, with seasonal water limitations and fire as the major drivers of tree-grass dynamics (Baudena *et al.*, 2015). Grassy woodlands are expected to undergo imminent ecological changes due to eCO₂ because of increases in soil water content and plant biomass (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Bond & Midgley, 2000, Scheiter *et al.*, 2015), that will be largely influenced by responses of the understory herbaceous species to eCO₂ (Nilsson & Wardle, 2005, Valladares *et al.*, 2016). In this study, I investigated the main pretext for this, that eCO₂ causes decrease in g_s of the herbaceous understory species and increase in soil water content (Chapter 2). In contrast to the expectations, I did not observe a significant decrease in g_s under eCO₂ in the dominant herbaceous species nor an increase in soil water content, even during the most water-limited periods (Chapter 2). These results suggest that changes in the tree/shrub-grass competition for water, via eCO₂-induced increase in soil water content, may not occur under future rise in CO₂ for ecosystems similar to the one I studied.

Fire is an important determinant of tree-grass interactions in the grassy woodlands whereas grasses constitute most of the fuel load (Baudena *et al.*, 2015). Elevated CO₂ has been thought to increase grass biomass (in both C₃ and C₄) due to a ‘water-savings effect’ (Bond & Midgley, 2012, Kgope *et al.*, 2010, Morgan *et al.*, 2011) and/or increase C₃ grass biomass due to direct stimulation of photosynthetic rates (Long *et al.*, 2004, Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Polley, 1997). In contrast, eCO₂ may also cause decrease in C₄ grass biomass given that C₃ species are favoured by direct stimulation effect of eCO₂ over the C₄ species (Bazzaz, 1990, Percy & Ehleringer, 1984). Such eCO₂-induced changes in grass fuel

along with the delayed drying due to a ‘water-savings effect’, have been expected to alter the fire regimes in ecosystems like savannas and grassy woodlands characterised by fire as an important driver of ecosystem processes (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Kgope *et al.*, 2010). In the current study, there was no ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ (Chapter 2) nor a significant stimulation of biomass under eCO₂ in the herbaceous species (Chapter 3 and 4). Results from my study suggest that eCO₂ may not alter the fire regimes in a fire prone Australian grassy woodland via increase in fuel load or increase in soil water availability, though changes in fire regimes via other mechanisms like altered litter flammability under eCO₂ may be possible (Cary *et al.*, 2012, Manea *et al.*, 2015).

5.4 Implications of the current study for the Earth system models

My research provides information that could be used to validate the previous predictions related to eCO₂ effects on photosynthesis and productivity responses of the herbaceous C₃ species from a warm grassy woodland growing in water and P-limited conditions (Medlyn *et al.*, 2016). Specifically, the negative relationship of eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement with seasonal water availability, absence of a ‘water-savings effect’ (Chapter 2) and lack of significant biomass stimulation under eCO₂ observed in the herbaceous species of a water and P-limited grassy woodland ecosystem (Chapter 3) may be of particular importance.

For instance, previous modelling studies have predicted a trend towards ‘global greening’ in the warm semi-arid regions (Donohue *et al.*, 2013), which has been attributed to eCO₂-induced ‘water-savings effect’ thought to enable plants to use less water and therefore stay greener (Lu *et al.*, 2016). Furthermore, Fatichi *et al.*, (2016) used an ecohydrological model to determine the relative importance of direct (enhanced photosynthetic rates) and indirect effects (soil water savings) of eCO₂ on NPP and evapotranspiration. Their results predicted a larger effect of eCO₂ (28% stimulation of NPP) for water-limited ecosystems mediated via increase in soil water content. Using a dynamic global vegetation model (LPJ-GUESS) and model inter-comparison, Alhström *et al.*, (2015) predicted a greater mean C sink capacity under eCO₂ for the warm semi-arid ecosystems. Experimental findings from the current study contrast the previous modelling predictions (Ahlström *et*

al., 2015, Fatichi *et al.*, 2016), as there was there was no ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ nor biomass stimulation for the herbaceous species in a warm water-limited grassy woodland.

An elevated CO₂-induced increase in soil water content and plant biomass has also been proposed to cause significant changes in the tree-grass interactions and fire regimes in the grass-dominated and fire prone ecosystems like savannas and grassy woodlands (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Scheiter *et al.*, 2015). This study reports a lack of ‘water-savings effect’ of eCO₂ (Chapter 2) and no increase in the herbaceous species biomass under eCO₂ (Chapter 3 and 4) in a seasonally water-limited and fire prone Australian grassy woodland. Data generated from this study may help validate the assumptions pertaining to eCO₂ effects on woody thickening process and fire regimes in grassy woodlands like the one in the current study, particularly in the Australian context (Baudena *et al.*, 2015, Scheiter *et al.*, 2015).

5.5 Overall conclusions

The main aspects arising from the thesis can be briefly summarised as follows:

- (1) Results obtained from this study support the general view that responses to eCO₂, especially photosynthetic ones, are strongest during the drier conditions (Morgan *et al.*, 2004, Nowak *et al.*, 2004). In particular, for the C₃ species from a seasonally water-limited ecosystem, the proportional eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement was a decreasing function of seasonal water availability.
- (2) Following this, seasonal water availability is important in determining the photosynthetic responses of herbaceous species to eCO₂, as has been recently reported for herbaceous biomass responses to eCO₂ (Hovenden *et al.*, 2014).
- (3) Elevated CO₂ did not decrease g_s and increase in soil water content, even during the dry periods when the magnitude of a ‘water-savings effect’ was expected to be larger. Thus, eCO₂ has the potential to alter the functioning of periodically water-limited grassy woodland ecosystems, though not via a ‘water-savings effect’ as is usually observed in temperate grasslands (Blumenthal *et al.*, 2013, Morgan *et al.*, 2011).

- (4) The proportional eCO₂-induced A_{net} enhancement observed during dry periods was a result of amelioration of drought-induced stomatal limitations via increase in C_i.
- (5) There was evidence of photosynthetic capacity down-regulation in the dominant understory C₃ herbaceous species, particularly during the peak growing seasons.
- (6) Plant species differed in their photosynthetic and biomass allocation responses to eCO₂, which may be a result of differences in nutrient acquisition and use strategies.
- (7) There was no significant stimulation of biomass under eCO₂ in the understory herbaceous species from a warm water and nutrient-limited grassy woodland ecosystem.

5.6 Limitations of the study

In chapter 2 and 3, I report the findings from field experiments conducted at the EucFACE facility. A FACE experiment is indeed an effective platform to investigate plant eco-physiological responses to eCO₂, as it provides a direct field insight into effects of eCO₂ on the complex terrestrial ecosystem functioning without disturbing natural ecosystem level processes (Nowak *et al.*, 2004). However, one of the typical issues involved in these large-scale, expensive experiments is the low number of true replicates, that is, $n = 3$ in case of EucFACE (and many of the other FACE experiments worldwide). Consequently, ability to detect CO₂ effects is often constrained by reduced statistical power, especially when there is naturally substantial between-ring variation. In chapter 3, I report the effects of eCO₂ on the above-ground biomass of the herbaceous understory species for two-time points only, with one time-point per year. The *Eucalyptus* woodland ecosystem in this study experiences considerable seasonal variation in environmental factors like temperature, precipitation and nutrient availability, which can interact with eCO₂ thus resulting in significant seasonal variation in CO₂ effects on biomass. This study could have benefitted more from multiple seasonal above-ground biomass harvests. However, being located in the native endangered ecosystem, frequent destructive harvesting at the EucFACE facility was not feasible, and it would compromise a number of other scientific studies in the plots. Another limitation of the current study was the inability to estimate

below-ground biomass of individual species, as the species at the site grow naturally in competition. One of the important limitations of the glasshouse experiment (Chapter 4) was the inability to capture interactions of eCO₂ effects with seasonal fluctuations in climate. A second key limitation of the glasshouse study was that the N and P status of plants in the field were not well-matched in the glasshouse even when the same soil was used in pots in the glasshouse.

5.7 Future work needed

My research provides important information pertaining to photosynthesis and productivity responses of herbaceous C₃ species from a warm, water and P-limited grassy woodland ecosystem. However, there are many avenues and options for further research to be undertaken. Following are some of the areas of research identified for possible further work relevant to the effects of eCO₂ on herbaceous understory species:

- (1) **Does eCO₂ alter biomass flammability?:** Results from this thesis suggest that eCO₂ does not cause increase in soil water content (Chapter 2) as well as biomass (Chapter 3 and 4) in the herbaceous species of a grassy woodland. Consequently, eCO₂ may not alter the fire regimes via delayed drying and increased fuel load. However, earlier studies suggest that eCO₂ can change the litter flammability through effects of leaf chemical composition (Cary *et al.*, 2012, Manea *et al.*, 2015). Thus, in future studies it would be interesting to investigate if eCO₂ has altered the leaf chemical properties and hence flammability of herbaceous species biomass in this fire prone grassy woodland ecosystem.
- (2) **Measurement of root biomass in synchronization with shoot biomass:** In this study I measured only the above-ground biomass of herbaceous species at the EucFACE facility (Chapter 3). Lack of data on root biomass and shoot biomass measured in synchronization precludes a definitive answer to the question on effect of CO₂ on total productivity of a warm ecosystem. Lack of root biomass stimulation under eCO₂ observed in the glasshouse experiment for the dominant species in this study (Chapter 4), provides preliminary evidence that eCO₂ may not stimulate herbaceous species root biomass in this P-limited ecosystem. Thus,

upcoming shoot and root biomass measurements at the EucFACE facility should be carried out in synchronization with each other.

(3) Does eCO₂ alter the composition of herbaceous community? In this study, I did not observe a significant CO₂ effect on above-ground biomass of grasses and forbs (Chapter 3) measured during the second and third year of CO₂ fertilisation at EucFACE. However, there was a non-significant trend towards lower above-ground biomass (-30%) under eCO₂ in the forbs measured at EucFACE, in contrast to a non-significant increase in grass biomass (+14%). This trend was also supported by the total biomass data from the glasshouse study, where the grass biomass did not respond to eCO₂ whereas a significant decrease in forb biomass was observed under eCO₂ (Chapter 4). These results suggest that grasses and forbs may respond differently to eCO₂ with implications for altered understory composition in this grassy woodland. However, responses of community composition and abundance are likely to operate on long-time frames, longer than the 3-year observational span of the current study. This is particularly true considering the large seasonal variation in environmental conditions like water and nutrient availability and temperature that can influence eCO₂ effect on biomass and species composition. Thus, long-term measurement of grass and forb biomass at the EucFACE is indeed required to assess changes in community composition. For instance, work by Morgan *et al.*, 2011, in the first three years of the Prairie Heating and CO₂ Enrichment (PHACE) experiment, showed an overall increase in productivity under eCO₂ conditions. However, a study extending over the eight-year duration of PHACE experiment showed that eCO₂ reduced biomass production of dominant species, particularly in later years (Zelikova *et al.*, 2014). Thus, under long-term, plant responses to eCO₂ can diminish over time. To accurately predict the change in plant community composition under eCO₂, studies addressing the responses of dominant, subdominant as well as invasive plant species and extending for at least 10 years of duration may be necessary. Furthermore, it would also be interesting to assess the photosynthetic and biomass responses to eCO₂ by grouping the understory herbaceous species of the *Eucalyptus* woodland into native and invasive. Results from the current study

indicate that invasive C₃ grasses may have advantage over the invasive forbs as well as native forbs. However, detailed study of photosynthesis and productivity of all the invasive species is essential to make definitive predictions about future invasions. This would be helpful in assessing the vulnerability of this grassy woodland ecosystem to plant invasions under climate change.

References

- Adler PB, Salguero-Gómez R, Compagnoni A, Hsu JS, Ray-Mukherjee J, Mbeau-Ache C, Franco M (2014) Functional traits explain variation in plant life history strategies. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, **111**, 740-745.
- Ahlström A, Smith B, Lindström J, Rummukainen M, Uvo CB (2013) GCM characteristics explain the majority of uncertainty in projected 21st century terrestrial ecosystem carbon balance. *Biogeosciences*, **10**, 1517-1528.
- Ahlström A, Raupach MR, Schurgers G *et al.* (2015) The dominant role of semi-arid ecosystems in the trend and variability of the land CO₂ sink. *Science*, **348**, 895-899.
- Ainsworth EA, Davey PA, Hymus GJ *et al.* (2003a) Is stimulation of leaf photosynthesis by elevated carbon dioxide concentration maintained in the long term? A test with *Lolium perenne* grown for 10 years at two nitrogen fertilisation levels under free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE). *Plant Cell and Environment*, **26**, 705-714.
- Ainsworth EA, Rogers A, Blum H, Nosberger J, Long SP (2003b) Variation in acclimation of photosynthesis in *Trifolium repens* after eight years of exposure to Free Air CO₂ Enrichment (FACE). *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **54**, 2769-2774.
- Ainsworth EA, Long SP (2005) What have we learned from 15 years of free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE)? A meta-analytic review of the responses of photosynthesis, canopy properties and plant production to rising CO₂. *New Phytologist*, **165**, 351-371.
- Ainsworth EA, Rogers A (2007) The response of photosynthesis and stomatal conductance to rising [CO₂]: mechanisms and environmental interactions. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **30**, 258-270.
- Albert KR, Ro-Poulsen H, Mikkelsen TN, Michelsen A, Van Der Linden L, Beier C (2011) Effects of elevated CO₂, warming and drought episodes on plant carbon uptake in a temperate heath ecosystem are controlled by soil water status. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **34**, 1207-1222.

- Ali AA, Medlyn BE, Crous KY, Reich PB (2013) A trait-based ecosystem model suggests that long-term responsiveness to rising atmospheric CO₂ concentration is greater in slow-growing than fast-growing plants. *Functional Ecology*, **27**, 1011-1022.
- Anderson LJ, Maherali H, Johnson HB, Polley HW, Jackson RB (2001) Gas exchange and photosynthetic acclimation over subambient to elevated CO₂ in a C₃-C₄ grassland. *Global Change Biology*, **7**, 693-707.
- Andersson I, Backlund A (2008) Structure and function of Rubisco. *Plant Physiology and Biochemistry*, **46**, 275-291.
- Aranjuelo I, Cabrera-Bosquet L, Morcuende R *et al.* (2011) Does ear C sink strength contribute to overcoming photosynthetic acclimation of wheat plants exposed to elevated CO₂? *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **62**, 3957-3969.
- Arora VK, Boer GJ, Friedlingstein P *et al.* (2013) Carbon-concentration and carbon-climate feedbacks in CMIP5 Earth system models. *Journal of Climate*, **26**, 5289-5314.
- Awmack CS, Mondor EB, Lindroth RL (2007) Forest understory clover populations in enriched CO₂ and O₃ atmospheres: Interspecific, intraspecific, and indirect effects. *Environmental and Experimental Botany*, **59**, 340-346.
- Bagley J, Rosenthal DM, Ruiz-Vera UM, Siebers MH, Kumar P, Ort DR, Bernacchi CJ (2015) The influence of photosynthetic acclimation to rising CO₂ and warmer temperatures on leaf and canopy photosynthesis models. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles*, **29**, 194-206.
- Baig S, Medlyn BE, Mercado LM, Zaehle S (2015) Does the growth response of woody plants to elevated CO₂ increase with temperature? A model-oriented meta-analysis. *Global Change Biology*, **21**, 4303-4319.
- Bandeff JM, Pregitzer KS, Loya WM, Holmes WE, Zak DR (2006) Overstory community composition and elevated atmospheric CO₂ and O₃ modify understory biomass production and nitrogen acquisition. *Plant and Soil*, **282**, 251-259.
- Baudena M, Dekker SC, Van Bodegom PM *et al.* (2015) Forests, savannas, and grasslands: bridging the knowledge gap between ecology and dynamic global vegetation models. *Biogeosciences*, **12**, 1833-1848.

- Bazzaz FA (1990) The response of natural ecosystems to the rising global CO₂ levels. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics*, **21**, 167-196.
- Belote RT, Weltzin JF, Norby RJ (2004) Response of an understory plant community to elevated [CO₂] depends on differential responses of dominant invasive species and is mediated by soil water availability. *New Phytologist*, **161**, 827-835.
- Benjamini Y, Hochberg Y (1995) Controlling the false discovery rate: a practical and powerful approach to multiple testing. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society. Series B (Methodological)*, **57**, 289-300.
- Berg A, Findell K, Lintner B *et al.* (2016) Land-atmosphere feedbacks amplify aridity increase over land under global warming. *Nature Climate Change*, **6**, 869-874.
- Bernacchi CJ, VanLoocke A (2015) Terrestrial ecosystems in a changing environment: a dominant role for water. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, **66**, 599-622.
- Bloom AJ, Burger M, Asensio JSR, Cousins AB (2010) Carbon dioxide enrichment inhibits nitrate assimilation in wheat and *Arabidopsis*. *Science*, **328**, 899-903.
- Bloom AJ, Burger M, Kimball BA, Pinter Jr PJ (2014) Nitrate assimilation is inhibited by elevated CO₂ in field-grown wheat. *Nature Climate Change*, **4**, 477-480.
- Blumenthal DM, Resco V, Morgan JA *et al.* (2013) Invasive forb benefits from water savings by native plants and carbon fertilisation under elevated CO₂ and warming. *New Phytologist*, **200**, 1156-1165.
- Bond WJ, Midgley GF (2000) A proposed CO₂-controlled mechanism of woody plant invasion in grasslands and savannas. *Global Change Biology*, **6**, 865-869.
- Bond WJ, Midgley GF (2012) Carbon dioxide and the uneasy interactions of trees and savannah grasses *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, **367**, 601-612.
- Bowes G (1993) Facing the inevitable - plants and increasing atmospheric CO₂. *Annual Review of Plant Physiology and Plant Molecular Biology*, **44**, 309-332.
- Brookshire ENJ, Gerber S, Menge DNL, Hedin LO (2012) Large losses of inorganic nitrogen from tropical rainforests suggest a lack of nitrogen limitation. *Ecology Letters*, **15**, 9-16.

- Burnett AC, Rogers A, Rees M, Osborne CP (2016) Carbon source–sink limitations differ between two species with contrasting growth strategies. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **39**, 2460-2472.
- Campbell CD, Sage RF (2006) Interactions between the effects of atmospheric CO₂ content and P nutrition on photosynthesis in white lupin (*Lupinus albus* L.). *Plant Cell and Environment*, **29**, 844-853.
- Campbell GS, Norman JM (2000) *An introduction to environmental biophysics*, Springer New York.
- Carol Adair E, Reich PB, Trost JJ, Hobbie SE (2011) Elevated CO₂ stimulates grassland soil respiration by increasing carbon inputs rather than by enhancing soil moisture. *Global Change Biology*, **17**, 3546-3563.
- Cary GJ, Bradstock RA, Gill AM, Williams RJ (2012) *Global change and fire regimes in Australia*, CSIRO Publishing: Collingwood, VIC, Canada.
- Cernusak LA, Winter K, Dalling JW *et al.* (2013) Tropical forest responses to increasing atmospheric CO₂: Current knowledge and opportunities for future research. *Functional Plant Biology*, **40**, 531-551.
- Chaves MM, Pereira JS, Maroco J *et al.* (2002) How plants cope with water stress in the field? Photosynthesis and growth. *Annals of Botany*, **89**, 907-916.
- Chazdon RL, Pearcy RW (1991) The importance of sunflecks for forest understory plants. *BioScience*, **41**, 760-766.
- Cheng L, Booker FL, Tu C *et al.* (2012) Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi increase organic carbon decomposition under elevated CO₂. *Science*, **337**, 1084-1087.
- Cleland EE, Chiariello NR, Loarie SR, Mooney HA, Field CB (2006) Diverse responses of phenology to global changes in a grassland ecosystem. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, **103**, 13740-13744.
- Collatz GJ, Ball JT, Grivet C, Berry JA (1991) Physiological and environmental regulation of stomatal conductance, photosynthesis and transpiration: a model that includes a laminar boundary layer. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology*, **54**, 107-136.

- Collins L, Bradstock RA, Resco de Dios V, Duursma RA, Velasco S, Boer MM (2018) Understorey productivity in temperate grassy woodland responds to soil water availability but not to elevated [CO₂]. *Global Change Biology*, **00**, 1–11.
- Craven D, Dent D, Braden D, Ashton MS, Berlyn GP, Hall JS (2011) Seasonal variability of photosynthetic characteristics influences growth of eight tropical tree species at two sites with contrasting precipitation in Panama. *Forest Ecology and Management*, **261**, 1643-1653.
- Crous KY, Reich PB, Hunter MD, Ellsworth DS (2010) Maintenance of leaf N controls the photosynthetic CO₂ response of grassland species exposed to 9 years of free-air CO₂ enrichment. *Global Change Biology*, **16**, 2076-2088.
- Crous KY, Zaragoza-Castells J, Löw M *et al.* (2011) Seasonal acclimation of leaf respiration in *Eucalyptus saligna* trees: impacts of elevated atmospheric CO₂ and summer drought. *Global Change Biology*, **17**, 1560-1576.
- Crous KY, Quentin AG, Lin Y-S, Medlyn BE, Williams DG, Barton CVM, Ellsworth DS (2013) Photosynthesis of temperate *Eucalyptus globulus* trees outside their native range has limited adjustment to elevated CO₂ and climate warming. *Global Change Biology*, **19**, 3790-3807.
- Crous KY, Ósvaldsson A, Ellsworth DS (2015) Is phosphorus limiting in a mature *Eucalyptus* woodland? Phosphorus fertilisation stimulates stem growth. *Plant and Soil*, **391**, 293-305.
- Curtis PS, Wang X (1998) A meta-analysis of elevated CO₂ effects on woody plant mass, form, and physiology. *Oecologia*, **113**, 299-313.
- Dawes MA, Philipson CD, Fonti P, Bebi P, Hättenschwiler S, Hagedorn F, Rixen C (2015) Soil warming and CO₂ enrichment induce biomass shifts in alpine tree line vegetation. *Global Change Biology*, **21**, 2005-2021.
- De Graaff M-A, Van Groenigen K-J, Six J, Hungate B, Van Kessel C (2006) Interactions between plant growth and soil nutrient cycling under elevated CO₂: a meta-analysis. *Global Change Biology*, **12**, 2077-2091.
- Deng Q, Hui D, Luo Y *et al.* (2015) Down-regulation of tissue N:P ratios in terrestrial plants by elevated CO₂. *Ecology*, **96**, 3354-3362.
- Dietze MC (2014) Gaps in knowledge and data driving uncertainty in models of photosynthesis. *Photosynthesis Research*, **119**, 3-14.

- Dijkstra FA, Blumenthal D, Morgan JA, Lecain DR, Follett RF (2010) Elevated CO₂ effects on semi-arid grassland plants in relation to water availability and competition. *Functional Ecology*, **24**, 1152-1161.
- Donohue RJ, Roderick ML, Mcvicar TR, Farquhar GD (2013) Impact of CO₂ fertilisation on maximum foliage cover across the globe's warm, arid environments. *Geophysical Research Letters*, **40**, 3031-3035.
- Drake BG, Gonzalez-Meler MA, Long SP (1997) More efficient plants : a consequence of rising atmospheric CO₂? *Annu Rev Plant Physiol Plant Mol Biol*, **48**, 609-639.
- Drake JE, Macdonald CA, Tjoelker MG *et al.* (2016) Short-term carbon cycling responses of a mature eucalypt woodland to gradual stepwise enrichment of atmospheric CO₂ concentration. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 380-390.
- Dukes JS, Chiariello NR, Cleland EE *et al.* (2005) Responses of grassland production to single and multiple global environmental changes. *PLoS Biology*, **3**, e319.
- Duursma RA, Medlyn BE (2012) MAESPA: a model to study interactions between water limitation, environmental drivers and vegetation function at tree and stand levels, with an example application to [CO₂] × drought interactions. *Geoscientific Model Development*, **5**, 919-940.
- Duursma RA (2015) Plantecophys - an R package for analysing and modelling leaf gas exchange data. *PLoS One*, **10**, e0143346.
- Duursma RA, Gimeno TE, Boer MM, Crous KY, Tjoelker MG, Ellsworth DS (2016) Canopy leaf area of a mature evergreen *Eucalyptus* woodland does not respond to elevated atmospheric [CO₂] but tracks water availability. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 1666-1676.
- Edwards EJ, Mccaffery S, Evans JR (2005) Phosphorus status determines biomass response to elevated CO₂ in a legume:C₄ grass community. *Global Change Biology*, **11**, 1968-1981.
- Ellsworth DS, Reich PB, Naumburg ES, Koch GW, Kubiske ME, Smith SD (2004) Photosynthesis, carboxylation and leaf nitrogen responses of 16 species to elevated pCO₂ across four free-air CO₂ enrichment experiments in forest, grassland and desert. *Global Change Biology*, **10**, 2121-2138.

- Ellsworth DS, Thomas R, Crous KY *et al.* (2012) Elevated CO₂ affects photosynthetic responses in canopy pine and subcanopy deciduous trees over 10 years: a synthesis from Duke FACE. *Global Change Biology*, **18**, 223-242.
- Ellsworth DS, Crous KY, Lambers H, Cooke J (2015) Phosphorus recycling in photorespiration maintains high photosynthetic capacity in woody species. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **38**, 1142-1156.
- Ellsworth DS, Anderson IC, Crous KY *et al.* (2017) Elevated CO₂ does not increase eucalypt forest productivity on a low-phosphorus soil. *Nature Climate Change*, **7**, 279-282.
- Erickson JE, Megonigal JP, Peresta G, Drake BG (2007) Salinity and sea level mediate elevated CO₂ effects on C₃-C₄ plant interactions and tissue nitrogen in a Chesapeake Bay tidal wetland. *Global Change Biology*, **13**, 202-215.
- Evans JR (1989) Photosynthesis and nitrogen relationships in leaves of C₃ plants. *Oecologia*, **78**, 9-19.
- Farquhar GD, Von Caemmerer S, Berry JA (1980) A biochemical model of photosynthetic CO₂ assimilation in leaves of C₃ species. *Planta*, **149**, 78-90.
- Farquhar GD, Sharkey TD (1982) Stomatal conductance and photosynthesis. *Annual Review of Plant Physiology*, **33**, 317-345.
- Fatichi S, Leuzinger S (2013) Reconciling observations with modeling: The fate of water and carbon allocation in a mature deciduous forest exposed to elevated CO₂. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology*, **174-175**, 144-157.
- Fatichi S, Leuzinger S, Körner C (2014) Moving beyond photosynthesis: from carbon source to sink-driven vegetation modeling. *New Phytologist*, **201**, 1086-1095.
- Fatichi S, Leuzinger S, Paschalis A, Langley JA, Barraclough AD, Hovenden MJ (2016) Partitioning direct and indirect effects reveals the response of water-limited ecosystems to elevated CO₂. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, **113**, 12757-12762.
- Fay PA, Jin VL, Way DA, Potter KN, Gill RA, Jackson RB, Wayne Polley H (2012) Soil-mediated effects of subambient to increased carbon dioxide on grassland productivity. *Nature Climate Change*, **2**, 742-746.

- Feng Z, Rütting T, Pleijel H *et al.* (2015) Constraints to nitrogen acquisition of terrestrial plants under elevated CO₂. *Global Change Biology*, **21**, 3152-3168.
- Field CB, Jackson RB, Mooney HA (1995) Stomatal responses to increased CO₂: implications from the plant to the global scale. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **18**, 1214-1225.
- Flexas J, Ribas-Carbó M, Diaz-Espejo A, Galmés J, Medrano H (2008) Mesophyll conductance to CO₂: current knowledge and future prospects. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **31**, 602-621.
- Foyer CH, Bloom AJ, Queval G, Noctor G (2009) Photorespiratory metabolism: genes, mutants, energetics, and redox signaling. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, **60**, 455-484.
- Franks PJ, Adams MA, Amthor JS, Barbour MM, Berry JA, Ellsworth DS, Farquhar GD, Ghannoum O, Lloyd J, McDowell N, Norby RJ, Tissue DT, von Caemmerer S (2013) Sensitivity of plants to changing atmospheric CO₂ concentration: from the geological past to the next century. *New Phytologist*, **197**, 1077-1094.
- Friedlingstein P, Meinshausen M, Arora VK, Jones CD, Anav A, Liddicoat SK, Knutti R (2014) Uncertainties in CMIP5 climate projections due to carbon cycle feedbacks. *Journal of Climate*, **27**, 511-526.
- Friend AD (2010) Terrestrial plant production and climate change. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **61**, 1293-1309.
- Funk JL (2008) Differences in plasticity between invasive and native plants from a low resource environment. *Journal of Ecology*, **96**, 1162-1173.
- Galmés J, Medrano H, Flexas J (2007) Photosynthetic limitations in response to water stress and recovery in Mediterranean plants with different growth forms. *New Phytologist*, **175**, 81-93.
- Ghannoum O, Conroy JP, Driscoll SP, Paul MJ, Foyer CH, Lawlor DW (2003) Nonstomatal limitations are responsible for drought-induced photosynthetic inhibition in four C₄ grasses. *New Phytologist*, **159**, 599-608.
- Gill RA, Polley HW, Johnson HB, Anderson LJ, Maherali H, Jackson RB (2002) Nonlinear grassland responses to past and future atmospheric CO₂. *Nature*, **417**, 279-282.

- Gimeno TE, Crous KY, Cooke J, O'grady AP, Ósvaldsson A, Medlyn BE, Ellsworth DS (2016) Conserved stomatal behaviour under elevated CO₂ and varying water availability in a mature woodland. *Functional Ecology*, **30**, 700-709.
- Grace JB (2006) *Structural equation modeling and natural systems*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, U.K.
- Granados J, Körner C (2002) In deep shade, elevated CO₂ increases the vigor of tropical climbing plants. *Global Change Biology*, **8**, 1109-1117.
- Grassi G, Magnani F (2005) Stomatal, mesophyll conductance and biochemical limitations to photosynthesis as affected by drought and leaf ontogeny in ash and oak trees. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **28**, 834-849.
- Gray SB, Dermody O, Klein SP *et al.* (2016) Intensifying drought eliminates the expected benefits of elevated carbon dioxide for soybean. *Nature Plants*, **2**, 16132.
- Grünzweig JM, Körner C (2003) Differential phosphorus and nitrogen effects drive species and community responses to elevated CO₂ in semi-arid grassland. *Functional Ecology*, **17**, 766-777.
- Güsewell S (2004) N : P ratios in terrestrial plants: variation and functional significance. *New Phytologist*, **164**, 243-266.
- Harley PC, Sharkey TD (1991) An improved model of C₃ photosynthesis at high CO₂: Reversed O₂ sensitivity explained by lack of glycerate reentry into the chloroplast. *Photosynthesis Research*, **27**, 169-178.
- Hasegawa S (2015) Investigation into the effects of elevated carbon dioxide and temperature on nutrient cycling and understorey vegetation in a *Eucalyptus* woodland (Doctoral dissertation). Retrieved from <https://spiral.imperial.ac.uk:8443/>
- Hasegawa, S. , Macdonald, CA and Power, SA (2016), Elevated carbon dioxide increases soil nitrogen and phosphorus availability in a phosphorus-limited *Eucalyptus* woodland. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 1628-1643.
- Hasegawa S, Piñeiro J, Ochoa-Hueso R, Haign AM, Rymer PD, Barnett KL, Power SA, Gilliam F (2018) Elevated CO₂ concentrations reduce C₄ cover and decrease diversity of understorey plant community in a *Eucalyptus* woodland. *Journal of Ecology*, **00**, 1-12.

- Hassiotou F, Renton M, Ludwig M, Evans JR, Veneklaas EJ (2010) Photosynthesis at an extreme end of the leaf trait spectrum: how does it relate to high leaf dry mass per area and associated structural parameters? *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **61**, 3015-3028.
- Hättenschwiler STE, Körner CHR (2000) Tree seedling responses to *in situ* CO₂-enrichment differ among species and depend on understorey light availability. *Global Change Biology*, **6**, 213-226.
- Hättenschwiler STE (2001) Tree seedling growth in natural deep shade: functional traits related to interspecific variation in response to elevated CO₂. *Oecologia*, **129**, 31-42.
- Hedin LO, Brookshire ENJ, Menge DNL, Barron AR (2009) The nitrogen paradox in tropical forest ecosystems. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, **40**, 613-635.
- Heimann M, Reichstein M (2008) Terrestrial ecosystem carbon dynamics and climate feedbacks. *Nature*, **451**, 289-292.
- Hickler T, Smith B, Prentice IC, Mjöfors K, Miller P, Arneth A, Sykes MT (2008) CO₂ fertilisation in temperate FACE experiments not representative of boreal and tropical forests. *Global Change Biology*, **14**, 1531-1542.
- Higgins SI, Scheiter S (2012) Atmospheric CO₂ forces abrupt vegetation shifts locally, but not globally. *Nature*, **488**, 209-212.
- Hovenden MJ, Williams AL (2010) The impacts of rising CO₂ concentrations on Australian terrestrial species and ecosystems. *Austral Ecology*, **35**, 665-684.
- Hovenden MJ, Newton PCD, Wills KE (2014) Seasonal not annual rainfall determines grassland biomass response to carbon dioxide. *Nature*, **511**, 583-586.
- Huxman TE, Smith SD (2001) Photosynthesis in an invasive grass and native forb at elevated CO₂ during an El Niño year in the Mojave Desert. *Oecologia*, **128**, 193-201.
- Huxman TE, Wilcox BP, Breshears DD *et al.* (2005) Ecohydrological implications of woody plant encroachment. *Ecology*, **86**, 308-319.
- Inauen N, Körner C, Hiltbrunner E (2012) No growth stimulation by CO₂ enrichment in alpine glacier forefield plants. *Global Change Biology*, **18**, 985-999.

- IPCC (2013) *Climate Change 2013: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fifth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA, Cambridge University Press.
- Isopp H, Frehner M, Long SP, Nösberger J (2000) Sucrose-phosphate synthase responds differently to source-sink relations and to photosynthetic rates: *Lolium perenne* L. growing at elevated pCO₂ in the field. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **23**, 597-607.
- Jarvis AJ, Davies WJ (1998) The coupled response of stomatal conductance to photosynthesis and transpiration. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **49**, 399-406.
- Jarvis AJ, Mansfield TA, Davies WJ (1999) Stomatal behaviour, photosynthesis and transpiration under rising CO₂. *Plant Cell & Environment*, **22**, 639-648.
- Jin J, Tang C, Armstrong R, Butterly C, Sale P (2013) Elevated CO₂ temporally enhances phosphorus immobilisation in the rhizosphere of wheat and chickpea. *Plant and Soil*, **368**, 315-328.
- Jones HG (1985) Partitioning stomatal and non-stomatal limitations to photosynthesis. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **8**, 95-104.
- Jordan DN, Zitzer SF, Hendrey GR *et al.* (1999) Biotic, abiotic and performance aspects of the Nevada desert free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE) facility. *Global Change Biology*, **5**, 659-668.
- Katahata S-I, Naramoto M, Kakubari Y, Mukai Y (2007) Seasonal changes in photosynthesis and nitrogen allocation in leaves of different ages in evergreen understory shrub *Daphniphyllum humile*. *Trees*, **21**, 619-629.
- Keeling C, Whorf T (2005) Atmospheric carbon dioxide record from Mauna Loa. Carbon Dioxide Research Group, Scripps Institution of Oceanography, University of California La Jolla, California, 92093-90444.
- Kelly JWG, Duursma RA, Atwell BJ, Tissue DT, Medlyn BE (2016) Drought × CO₂ interactions in trees: a test of the low-intercellular CO₂ concentration (C_i) mechanism. *New Phytologist*, **209**, 1600-1612.
- Kgope BS, Bond WJ, Midgley GF (2010) Growth responses of African savanna trees implicate atmospheric [CO₂] as a driver of past and current changes in savanna tree cover. *Austral Ecology*, **35**, 451-463.

- Kim D, Oren R, Qian SS (2015) Response to CO₂ enrichment of understory vegetation in the shade of forests. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 944-956.
- Kirschbaum MUF (2011) Does enhanced photosynthesis enhance growth? Lessons learned from CO₂ enrichment studies. *Plant Physiology*, **155**, 117-124.
- Knapp AK, Briggs JM, Koelliker JK (2001) Frequency and extent of water limitation to primary production in a mesic temperate grassland. *Ecosystems*, **4**, 19-28.
- Knapp AK, Fay PA, Blair JM *et al.* (2002) Rainfall variability, carbon cycling, and plant species diversity in a mesic grassland. *Science*, **298**, 2202-2205.
- Körner C (2003) Ecological impacts of atmospheric CO₂ enrichment on terrestrial ecosystems. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society A*, **361**, 2023-2041.
- Körner C (2004) Through enhanced tree dynamics carbon dioxide enrichment may cause tropical forests to lose carbon. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B*, **359**, 493-498.
- Körner C, Asshoff R, Bignucolo O *et al.* (2005) Carbon flux and growth in mature deciduous forest trees exposed to elevated CO₂. *Science*, **309**, 1360-1362.
- Kubiske ME, Zak DR, Pregitzer KS, Takeuchi Y (2002) Photosynthetic acclimation of overstory *Populus tremuloides* and understory *Acer saccharum* to elevated atmospheric CO₂ concentration: interactions with shade and soil nitrogen. *Tree Physiology*, **22**, 321-329.
- Lamb EG, Shirliff SJ, May WE (2011) Structural equation modeling in the plant sciences: An example using yield components in oat. *Canadian Journal of Plant Science*, **91**, 603-619.
- Lambers H, Raven JA, Shaver GR, Smith SE (2008) Plant nutrient-acquisition strategies change with soil age. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, **23**, 95-103.
- Lavorel S, McIntyre S, Landsberg J, Forbes T (1997) Plant functional classifications: from general groups to specific groups based on response to disturbance. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, **12**, 474-478.
- Lawlor DW (2002) Limitation to photosynthesis in water-stressed leaves: stomata vs. metabolism and the role of ATP. *Annals of Botany*, **89**, 871-885.

- Leakey ADB, Ainsworth EA, Bernacchi CJ, Rogers A, Long SP, Ort DR (2009) Elevated CO₂ effects on plant carbon, nitrogen, and water relations: six important lessons from FACE. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **60**, 2859-2876.
- Leakey ADB, Bishop KA, Ainsworth EA (2012) A multi-biome gap in understanding of crop and ecosystem responses to elevated CO₂. *Current Opinion in Plant Biology*, **15**, 228-236.
- Lecain DR, Morgan JA, Mosier AR, Nelson JA (2003) Soil and plant water relations determine photosynthetic responses of C₃ and C₄ grasses in a semi-arid ecosystem under elevated CO₂. *Annals of Botany*, **92**, 41-52.
- Lee TD, Tjoelker MG, Ellsworth DS, Reich PB (2001) Leaf gas exchange responses of 13 prairie grassland species to elevated CO₂ and increased nitrogen supply. *New Phytologist*, **150**, 405-418.
- Lee TD, Barrott SH, Reich PB (2011) Photosynthetic responses of 13 grassland species across 11 years of free-air CO₂ enrichment is modest, consistent and independent of N supply. *Global Change Biology*, **17**, 2893-2904.
- Leopold AC (1961) Senescence in plant development. *Science*, **134**, 1727-1732.
- Lewis JD, Tissue DT, Strain BR (1996) Seasonal response of photosynthesis to elevated CO₂ in loblolly pine (*Pinus taeda* L.) over two growing seasons. *Global Change Biology*, **2**, 103-114.
- Lewis JD, Ward JK, Tissue DT (2010) Phosphorus supply drives nonlinear responses of cottonwood (*Populus deltoides*) to increases in CO₂ concentration from glacial to future concentrations. *New Phytologist*, **187**, 438-448.
- Liberloo M, Tulva I, Raim O, Kull O, Ceulemans R (2007) Photosynthetic stimulation under long-term CO₂ enrichment and fertilisation is sustained across a closed *Populus* canopy profile (EUROFACE). *New Phytologist*, **173**, 537-549.
- Liberloo M, Lukac M, Calfapietra C *et al.* (2009) Coppicing shifts CO₂ stimulation of poplar productivity to above-ground pools: a synthesis of leaf to stand level results from the POP/EUROFACE experiment. *New Phytologist*, **182**, 331-346.
- Long SP (1991) Modification of the response of photosynthetic productivity to rising temperature by atmospheric CO₂ concentrations: Has its importance been underestimated? *Plant Cell and Environment*, **14**, 729-739.

- Long SP, Drake BG (1991) Effect of the long-term elevation of CO₂ concentration in the field on the quantum yield of photosynthesis of the C₃ sedge, *Scirpus olneyi*. *Plant Physiology*, **96**, 221-226.
- Long SP, Ainsworth EA, Rogers A, Ort DR (2004) Rising atmospheric carbon dioxide: plants FACE the future. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, **55**, 591-628.
- Lu X, Wang L, McCabe MF (2016) Elevated CO₂ as a driver of global dryland greening. *Scientific Reports*, **6**, 20716.
- Luo Y, White LW, Canadell JG *et al.* (2003) Sustainability of terrestrial carbon sequestration: a case study in Duke Forest with inversion approach. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles*, **17**, GB 1012.
- Luo Y, Gerten D, Le Maire G *et al.* (2008) Modeled interactive effects of precipitation, temperature, and [CO₂] on ecosystem carbon and water dynamics in different climatic zones. *Global Change Biology*, **14**, 1986-1999.
- Manea A, Grootemaat S, Leishman MR (2015) Leaf flammability and fuel load increase under elevated CO₂ levels in a model grassland. *International Journal of Wildland Fire*, **24**, 819-827.
- Mccarthy HR, Oren R, Johnsen KH *et al.* (2010) Re-assessment of plant carbon dynamics at the Duke free-air CO₂ enrichment site: interactions of atmospheric [CO₂] with nitrogen and water availability over stand development. *New Phytologist*, **185**, 514-528.
- Mcnaught IT (2006) *A field manual for surveying and mapping nationally significant weeds*, Bureau of Rural Sciences, Canberra, Australia.
- Medlyn BE, Badeck FW, De Pury DGG *et al.* (1999) Effects of elevated [CO₂] on photosynthesis in European forest species: a meta-analysis of model parameters. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **22**, 1475-1495.
- Medlyn BE, Loustau D, Delzon S (2002) Temperature response of parameters of a biochemically based model of photosynthesis. I. Seasonal changes in mature maritime pine (*Pinus pinaster* Ait.). *Plant Cell and Environment*, **25**, 1155-1165.
- Medlyn BE, De Kauwe MG, Zaehle S *et al.* (2016) Using models to guide field experiments: a priori predictions for the CO₂ response of a nutrient- and water-limited native *Eucalypt* woodland. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 2834-2851.

- Miller A, Tsai CH, Hemphill D, Endres M, Rodermel S, Spalding M (1997) Elevated CO₂ effects during leaf ontogeny (a new perspective on acclimation). *Plant Physiology*, **115**, 1195-1200.
- Misson L, Baldocchi D, Black T *et al.* (2007) Partitioning forest carbon fluxes with overstory and understory eddy-covariance measurements: a synthesis based on FLUXNET data. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology*, **144**.
- Moore BD, Cheng SH, Sims D, Seemann JR (1999) The biochemical and molecular basis for photosynthetic acclimation to elevated atmospheric CO₂. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **22**, 567-582.
- Morgan JA, Lecain DR, Mosier AR, Milchunas DG (2001) Elevated CO₂ enhances water relations and productivity and affects gas exchange in C₃ and C₄ grasses of the Colorado shortgrass steppe. *Global Change Biology*, **7**, 451-466.
- Morgan JA, Pataki DE, Korner C *et al.* (2004) Water relations in grassland and desert ecosystems exposed to elevated atmospheric CO₂. *Oecologia*, **140**, 11-25.
- Morgan JA, Lecain DR, Pendall E *et al.* (2011) C₄ grasses prosper as carbon dioxide eliminates desiccation in warmed semi-arid grassland. *Nature*, **476**, 202-205.
- Mueller KE, Blumenthal DM, Pendall E *et al.* (2016) Impacts of warming and elevated CO₂ on a semi-arid grassland are non-additive, shift with precipitation, and reverse over time. *Ecology Letters*, **19**, 956-966.
- Naumburg E, Ellsworth SD (2000) Photosynthetic sunfleck utilisation potential of understory saplings growing under elevated CO₂ in FACE. *Oecologia*, **122**, 163-174.
- Naumburg E, Housman DC, Huxman TE, Charlet TN, Loik ME, Smith SD (2003) Photosynthetic responses of Mojave Desert shrubs to free air CO₂ enrichment are greatest during wet years. *Global Change Biology*, **9**, 276-285.
- Newingham BA, Vanier CH, Charlet TN, Ogle K, Smith SD, Nowak RS (2013) No cumulative effect of 10 years of elevated [CO₂] on perennial plant biomass components in the Mojave Desert. *Global Change Biology*, **19**, 2168-2181.
- Nie M, Lu M, Bell J, Raut S, Pendall E (2013) Altered root traits due to elevated CO₂: a meta-analysis. *Global Ecology and Biogeography*, **22**, 1095-1105.

- Niklaus PA, Körner C (2004) Synthesis of a six-year study of calcareous grassland responses to *in situ* CO₂ enrichment. *Ecological Monographs*, **74**, 491-511.
- Nilsson M-C, Wardle DA (2005) Understory vegetation as a forest ecosystem driver: evidence from the northern Swedish boreal forest. *Frontiers in Ecology and the Environment*, **3**, 421-428.
- Norby RJ, Warren JM, Iversen CM, Medlyn BE, Mcmurtrie RE (2010) CO₂ enhancement of forest productivity constrained by limited nitrogen availability. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, **107**, 19368-19373.
- Norby RJ, Zak DR (2011) Ecological lessons from free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE) experiments. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, **42**, 181-203.
- Norby RJ, De Kauwe MG, Domingues TF *et al.* (2016) Model–data synthesis for the next generation of forest free-air CO₂ enrichment (FACE) experiments. *New Phytologist*, **209**, 17-28.
- Nowak RS, Ellsworth DS, Smith SD (2004) Functional responses of plants to elevated atmospheric CO₂— do photosynthetic and productivity data from FACE experiments support early predictions? *New Phytologist*, **162**, 253-280.
- Oliver CD, Larson BC (1996) *Forest stand dynamics: updated edition*, John Wiley and Sons, Hoboken, NJ.
- Onoda Y, Hikosaka K, Hirose T (2005) Seasonal change in the balance between capacities of RuBP carboxylation and RuBP regeneration affects CO₂ response of photosynthesis in *Polygonum cuspidatum*. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **56**, 755-763.
- Oren R, Ellsworth DS, Johnsen KH *et al.* (2001) Soil fertility limits carbon sequestration by forest ecosystems in a CO₂-enriched atmosphere. *Nature*, **411**, 469-472.
- Owensby CE, Coyne PI, Ham JM, Auen LM, Knapp AK (1993) Biomass production in a tallgrass prairie ecosystem exposed to ambient and elevated CO₂. *Ecological Applications*, **3**, 644-653.
- Owensby CE, Ham JM, Knapp AK, Auen LM (1999) Biomass production and species composition change in a tallgrass prairie ecosystem after long-term exposure to elevated atmospheric CO₂. *Global Change Biology*, **5**, 497-506.

- Pathare VS, Crous KY, Cooke J, Creek D, Ghannoum O, Ellsworth DS (2017) Water availability affects seasonal CO₂-induced photosynthetic enhancement in herbaceous species in a periodically dry woodland. *Global Change Biology*, **00**, 1-15. DOI: 10.1111/gcb.13778.
- Pathare, VS (2017) Biomass from understory grass swards at EucFACE, unpublished data.
- Pearcy RW, Ehleringer J (1984) Comparative ecophysiology of C₃ and C₄ plants. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **7**, 1-13.
- Perry LG, Andersen DC, Reynolds LV, Nelson SM, Shafroth PB (2012) Vulnerability of riparian ecosystems to elevated CO₂ and climate change in arid and semiarid western North America. *Global Change Biology*, **18**, 821-842.
- Perry LG, Shafroth PB, Blumenthal DM, Morgan JA, Lecain DR (2013) Elevated CO₂ does not offset greater water stress predicted under climate change for native and exotic riparian plants. *New Phytologist*, **197**, 532-543.
- Peters GP, Marland G, Le Quéré C, Boden T, Canadell JG, Raupach MR (2012) Rapid growth in CO₂ emissions after the 2008–2009 global financial crisis. *Nature Climate Change*, **24**, 2-4.
- Phillips RP, Finzi AC, Bernhardt ES (2011) Enhanced root exudation induces microbial feedbacks to N cycling in a pine forest under long-term CO₂ fumigation. *Ecology Letters*, **14**, 187-194.
- Phillips RP, Meier IC, Bernhardt ES, Grandy AS, Wickings K, Finzi AC (2012) Roots and fungi accelerate carbon and nitrogen cycling in forests exposed to elevated CO₂. *Ecology Letters*, **15**, 1042-1049.
- Piao S, Ciais P, Friedlingstein P *et al.* (2008) Net carbon dioxide losses of northern ecosystems in response to autumn warming. *Nature*, **451**, 49-52.
- Pinheiro J, Bates D, Debroy S, Sarkar D, Team RC (2016) nlme: Linear and nonlinear mixed effects models. R package version 3.1-131.
- Polley HW (1997) Implications of rising atmospheric carbon dioxide concentration for rangelands. *Journal of Range Management Archives*, **50**, 562-577.
- Polley HW, Mayeux HS, Johnson HB, Tischler CR (1997) Viewpoint: atmospheric CO₂, soil water, and shrub/grass ratios on rangelands. *Journal of Range Management*, **50**, 278-284.

- Polley HW, Johnson HB, Derner JD (2003) Increasing CO₂ from subambient to superambient concentrations alters species composition and increases above-ground biomass in a C₃/C₄ grassland. *New Phytologist*, **160**, 319-327.
- Polley HW, Jin VL, Fay PA (2012a) CO₂-caused change in plant species composition rivals the shift in vegetation between mid-grass and tallgrass prairies. *Global Change Biology*, **18**, 700-710.
- Polley HW, Jin VL, Fay PA (2012b) Feedback from plant species change amplifies CO₂ enhancement of grassland productivity. *Global Change Biology*, **18**, 2813-2823.
- Poorter H, Evans JR (1998) Photosynthetic nitrogen-use efficiency of species that differ inherently in specific leaf area. *Oecologia*, **116**, 26-37.
- Poorter H, Navas M-L (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO₂: on winners, losers and functional groups. *New Phytologist*, **157**, 175-198.
- Poorter H, Niklas KJ, Reich PB, Oleksyn J, Poot P, Mommer L (2012) Biomass allocation to leaves, stems and roots: meta-analyses of interspecific variation and environmental control. *New Phytologist*, **193**, 30-50.
- Poorter L, Bongers F (2006) Leaf traits are good predictors of plant performance across 53 rain forest species. *Ecology*, **87**, 1733-1743.
- Prentice IC, Farquhar G, Fasham M *et al.* (2001) The carbon cycle and atmospheric carbon dioxide. pp Page., Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK.
- Prober SM, Thiele KR, Rundel PW *et al.* (2012) Facilitating adaptation of biodiversity to climate change: a conceptual framework applied to the world's largest Mediterranean-climate woodland. *Climatic Change*, **110**, 227-248.
- Rasse DP, Peresta G, Drake BG (2005) Seventeen years of elevated CO₂ exposure in a Chesapeake Bay Wetland: sustained but contrasting responses of plant growth and CO₂ uptake. *Global Change Biology*, **11**, 369-377.
- Rastetter EB, Shaver GR (1992) A model of multiple-element limitation for acclimating vegetation. *Ecology*, **73**, 1157-1174.
- Rastetter EB, Agren GI, Shaver GR (1997) Responses of N-limited ecosystems to increased CO₂: a balanced-nutrition, coupled-element-cycles model. *Ecological Applications*, **7**, 444-460.

- Reich PB, Tilman D, Craine J *et al.* (2001) Do species and functional groups differ in acquisition and use of C, N and water under varying atmospheric CO₂ and N availability regimes? A field test with 16 grassland species. *New Phytologist*, **150**, 435-448.
- Reich PB, Tilman D, Naeem S *et al.* (2004) Species and functional group diversity independently influence biomass accumulation and its response to CO₂ and N. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, **101**, 10101-10106.
- Reich PB, Hobbie SE, Lee T *et al.* (2006a) Nitrogen limitation constrains sustainability of ecosystem response to CO₂. *Nature*, **440**, 922-925.
- Reich PB, Hungate BA, Luo Y (2006b) Carbon-nitrogen interactions in terrestrial ecosystems in response to rising atmospheric carbon dioxide. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, **37**, 611-636.
- Reich PB, Hobbie SE (2013) Decade-long soil nitrogen constraint on the CO₂ fertilisation of plant biomass. *Nature Climate Change*, **3**, 278-282.
- Reich PB, Hobbie SE, Lee TD (2014) Plant growth enhancement by elevated CO₂ eliminated by joint water and nitrogen limitation. *Nature Geoscience*, **7**, 920-924.
- Reidinger S, Ramsey MH, Hartley SE (2012) Rapid and accurate analyses of silicon and phosphorus in plants using a portable X-ray fluorescence spectrometer. *New Phytologist*, **195**, 699-706.
- Reyes-Fox M, Steltzer H, Trlica MJ, McMaster GS, Andales AA, Lecain DR, Morgan JA (2014) Elevated CO₂ further lengthens growing season under warming conditions. *Nature*, **510**, 259-262.
- Rogers A, Ellsworth DS (2002) Photosynthetic acclimation of *Pinus taeda* (loblolly pine) to long-term growth in elevated pCO₂ (FACE). *Plant Cell and Environment*, **25**, 851-858.
- Rogers A, Ainsworth EA, Leakey ADB (2009) Will elevated carbon dioxide concentration amplify the benefits of nitrogen fixation in legumes? *Plant Physiology*, **151**, 1009-1016.
- Rogers A, Medlyn BE, Dukes JS *et al.* (2017) A roadmap for improving the representation of photosynthesis in Earth system models. *New Phytologist*, **213**, 22-42.

- Rosseel Y (2012) Lavaan: An R package for structural equation modeling and more. Version 0.5–12 (BETA). *Journal of Statistical Software*, **48**, 1-36.
- Ruiz-Vera UM, De Souza AP, Long SP, Ort DR (2017) The role of sink strength and nitrogen availability in the down-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in field-grown *Nicotiana tabacum* L. at elevated CO₂ concentration. *Frontiers in Plant Science*, **8**, 998.
- Sage RF (1994) Acclimation of photosynthesis to increasing atmospheric CO₂: The gas exchange perspective. *Photosynthesis Research*, **39**, 351-368.
- Sands D, Goolsby J (2011) The case for biological control of exotic African grasses in Australia and USA using introduced detritivores. In: *XIII International Symposium on Biological Control of Weeds*. pp Page.
- Sasek TW, Strain BR (1988) Effects of carbon dioxide enrichment on the growth and morphology of Kudzu (*Pueraria lobata*). *Weed Science*, **36**, 28-36.
- Scheiter S, Higgins SI, Beringer J, Hutley LB (2015) Climate change and long-term fire management impacts on Australian savannas. *New Phytologist*, **205**, 1211-1226.
- Schulze E, Kelliher FM, Korner C, Lloyd J, Leuning R (1994) Relationships among maximum stomatal conductance, ecosystem surface conductance, carbon assimilation rate, and plant nitrogen nutrition: a global ecology scaling exercise. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics*, **25**, 629-662.
- Sefcik LT, Zak DR, Ellsworth DS (2006) Photosynthetic responses to understory shade and elevated carbon dioxide concentration in four northern hardwood tree species. *Tree Physiology*, **26**, 1589-1599.
- Sefcik LT, Zak DR, Ellsworth DS (2007) Seedling survival in a northern temperate forest understory is increased by elevated atmospheric carbon dioxide and atmospheric nitrogen deposition. *Global Change Biology*, **13**, 132-146.
- Sharwood RE, Ghannoum O, Kapralov MV, Gunn LH, Whitney SM (2016) Temperature responses of Rubisco from Paniceae grasses provide opportunities for improving C₃ photosynthesis. *Nature Plants*, **2**, 16186.
- Sharwood RE, Crous KY, Whitney SM, Ellsworth DS, Ghannoum O (2017) Linking photosynthesis and leaf N allocation under future elevated CO₂ and climate warming in *Eucalyptus globulus*. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **68**, 1157-1167.

- Shaw MR, Zavaleta ES, Chiariello NR, Cleland EE, Mooney HA, Field CB (2002) Grassland responses to global environmental changes suppressed by elevated CO₂. *Science*, **298**, 1987-1990.
- Sigurdsson BD, Thorgeirsson H, Linder S (2001) Growth and dry-matter partitioning of young *Populus trichocarpa* in response to carbon dioxide concentration and mineral nutrient availability. *Tree Physiology*, **21**, 941-950.
- Sigurdsson BD, Medhurst JL, Wallin G, Eggertsson O, Linder S (2013) Growth of mature boreal Norway spruce was not affected by elevated [CO₂] and/or air temperature unless nutrient availability was improved. *Tree Physiology*, **33**, 1192-1205.
- Sillmann J, Kharin VV, Zhang X, Zwiers FW, Bronaugh D (2013) Climate extremes indices in the CMIP5 multimodel ensemble: Part 1. Model evaluation in the present climate. *Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres*, **118**, 1716-1733.
- Smith SD, Huxman TE, Zitzer SF *et al.* (2000) Elevated CO₂ increases productivity and invasive species success in an arid ecosystem. *Nature*, **408**, 79-82.
- Snyder PK, Delire C, Foley JA (2004) Evaluating the influence of different vegetation biomes on the global climate. *Climate Dynamics*, **23**, 279-302.
- Souza L, Belote RT, Kardol P, Weltzin JF, Norby RJ (2010) CO₂ enrichment accelerates successional development of an understory plant community. *Journal of Plant Ecology*, **3**, 33-39.
- Springer CJ, Thomas RB (2007) Photosynthetic responses of forest understory tree species to long-term exposure to elevated carbon dioxide concentration at the Duke Forest FACE experiment. *Tree Physiology*, **27**, 25-32.
- Stitt M (1991) Rising CO₂ levels and their potential significance for carbon flow in photosynthetic cells. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **14**, 741-762.
- Stitt M, Krapp A (1999) The interaction between elevated carbon dioxide and nitrogen nutrition: the physiological and molecular background. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **22**, 583-621.
- Suter D, Frehner M, Fischer BU, Nösberger J, Lüscher A (2002) Elevated CO₂ increases carbon allocation to the roots of *Lolium perenne* under free-air CO₂ enrichment but not in a controlled environment. *New Phytologist*, **154**, 65-75.

- Talhelm AF, Pregitzer KS, Kubiske ME *et al.* (2014) Elevated carbon dioxide and ozone alter productivity and ecosystem carbon content in northern temperate forests. *Global Change Biology*, **20**, 2492-2504.
- Taylor G, Tallis MJ, Giardina CP *et al.* (2008) Future atmospheric CO₂ leads to delayed autumnal senescence. *Global Change Biology*, **14**, 264-275.
- Teyssonneyre F, Picon-Cochard C, Falcimagne R, Soussana J-F (2002) Effects of elevated CO₂ and cutting frequency on plant community structure in a temperate grassland. *Global Change Biology*, **8**, 1034-1046.
- Tilman D, Wedin D (1991) Plant traits and resource reduction for five grasses growing on a nitrogen gradient. *Ecology*, **72**, 685-700.
- Tozer M (2003) The native vegetation of the Cumberland Plain, western Sydney: systematic classification and field identification of communities. *Cunninghamia*, **8**, 1-75.
- Valladares F, Laanisto L, Niinemets Ü, Zavala MA (2016) Shedding light on shade: ecological perspectives of understorey plant life. *Plant Ecology and Diversity*, **9**, 237-251.
- Vitousek PM, Porder S, Houlton BZ, Chadwick OA (2010) Terrestrial phosphorus limitation: mechanisms, implications, and nitrogen-phosphorus interactions. *Ecological Applications*, **20**, 5-15.
- Ward SJE, Midgley GF, Jones MH, Curtis PS (1999) Responses of wild C₄ and C₃ grass (Poaceae) species to elevated atmospheric CO₂ concentration: a meta-analytic test of current theories and perceptions. *Global Change Biology*, **5**, 723-741.
- Watson PJ (2005) Fire frequencies for Western Sydney's woodlands: indications from vegetation dynamics.
- White AC, Rogers A, Rees M, Osborne CP (2015) How can we make plants grow faster? A source-sink perspective on growth rate. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **67**, 31-45.
- Wilson KB, Baldocchi DD, Hanson PJ (2000) Quantifying stomatal and non-stomatal limitations to carbon assimilation resulting from leaf aging and drought in mature deciduous tree species. *Tree Physiology*, **20**, 787-797.

- Woodward FI, Cramer W (1996) Plant functional types and climatic change: Introduction. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, **7**, 306-308.
- Wullschleger SD, Tschaplinski TJ, Norby RJ (2002) Plant water relations at elevated CO₂ - implications for water-limited environments. *Plant Cell and Environment*, **25**, 319-331.
- Wullschleger SD, Epstein HE, Box EO *et al.* (2014) Plant functional types in Earth system models: past experiences and future directions for application of dynamic vegetation models in high-latitude ecosystems. *Annals of Botany*, **114**, 1-16.
- Würth MKR, Winter K, Körner CH (1998) In situ responses to elevated CO₂ in tropical forest understorey plants. *Functional Ecology*, **12**, 886-895.
- Yin X (2002) Responses of leaf nitrogen concentration and specific leaf area to atmospheric CO₂ enrichment: a retrospective synthesis across 62 species. *Global Change Biology*, **8**, 631-642.
- Zar JH (2007) *Biostatistical Analysis*, 5th Edn. Upper Saddle River, NJ, USA: Prentice-Hall, Inc.
- Zavaleta ES, Shaw MR, Chiariello NR, Mooney HA, Field CB (2003) Additive effects of simulated climate changes, elevated CO₂, and nitrogen deposition on grassland diversity. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, **100**, 7650-7654.
- Zelikova TJ, Blumenthal DM, Williams DG, Souza L, Lecain DR, Morgan J, Pendall E (2014) Long-term exposure to elevated CO₂ enhances plant community stability by suppressing dominant plant species in a mixed-grass prairie. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, **111**, 15456-15461.
- Zhu C, Ziska L, Zhu J *et al.* (2012) The temporal and species dynamics of photosynthetic acclimation in flag leaves of rice (*Oryza sativa*) and wheat (*Triticum aestivum*) under elevated carbon dioxide. *Physiologia Plantarum*, **145**, 395-405.
- Zhu Z, Piao S, Myneni RB *et al.* (2016) Greening of the Earth and its drivers. *Nature Climate Change*, **6**, 791-795.